

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1002 Life Inclination Spear - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1002 Life Inclination Spear

Chapter 1002 Life Inclination Spear

"Have I been freed?" Zhu You Cai lowered his head and sat down quietly on the floor. The world where he was located was formed by lakes. At that moment, there was one beside him, and the blue sky reflected off it.

Zhu You Cai looked at his thick palm, and after a long while... a faint red medicinal core appeared on it!

He looked at the medicinal core, and his expression slowly became gentle, but there was also anguish on his face.

"No matter who did it, I am free..." Zhu You Cai mumbled and stood up before casting a glance at the lake beside him. In silence, he walked over and lowered his head to look at the surface. When he did so, he saw his reflection in the water.

A body as plump as that of a boar met his eyes. He had a hideous look formed by layers of thick fat on his face. Bloodshot eyes, messy hair... After Zhu You Cai took a good look at himself, he closed his eyes.

When he opened them again... he was still Zhu You Cai. He moved and turned into a long arc that charged into the distance.

"The Abyss Builders of the Fifth True World have an Art that can resurrect the dead. As long as they have a fragment of a soul, they can make the dead come back to life. Even though the Fifth True World has disappeared and it is said that the Abyss Builders have been wiped out... as long as there is a fragment of hope, I must go to the Fifth True World. I must find an Abyss Builder and resurrect you..."

.....

As Su Ming and Flame Fiends' Progenitor moved through the passages of time and had their life force flow out from their bodies time and again, Su Ming began to feel exhausted, and he could not help but remember the promise of a thousand years to the cultivators in Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands.

That promise was related to time. Originally, it was for everyone, but once Su Ming Possessed Ecang, it disappeared, but the prerequisite was that... he had to have his Ecang clone devour the other Ecangs so that he would continue growing stronger until he occupied the entire Western Ring Nebula and turned it into his personal abode.

This was Su Ming's goal. At that moment, such a goal was still a little far away, but there was no doubt... that at that moment, his Ecang clone was already stronger than the other Ecangs. However, he was still not strong enough to devour the other souls in one go.

As Su Ming traveled forward, he moved through one dimension after another. He did not stop in any of them for long. Usually, after he came to a dimension, he would scan it with his Atman, and upon not discovering the body of the supreme treasure, he would immediately leave.

Because of it, things were hard for Flame Fiends' Progenitor. He was a Nascent Divinity. Each time he moved through another dimension, he would become even more tired, but he did not dare say a word because he was worried that he would stir up Su Ming's desire to kill him.

As he followed after him, he sighed continuously in his heart. When he came to the fifth kiln, he did not expect that he would end up like this, and it was not the first time he regretted his decision in his heart... Why did he show hostility towards Su Ming in the beginning?

'This person is ruthless and cunning. I absolutely can't provoke him again.'

Flame Fiends' Progenitor cast a wary glance at Su Ming in front of him. He might not have forced the Progenitor to follow him, but he could already imagine that if he did anything abnormal, it would be the same as giving the other an excuse to attack.

"After moving past the Spirit Trudging Platforms on the second border, the dimensions will reduce in number, and the chances of dimensions with supreme treasures appearing will increase. How much do you know about this?" Su Ming suddenly asked while rushing forward.

"The third border in the fifth kiln isn't really that dangerous, in comparison. After all, the chance of everyone running into each other isn't that high..." When Flame Fiends' Progenitor said this much, he stopped talking, and he sighed in his heart again.

"It's the similar between the third and second borders. The chances of us running into each other are higher, but if we're careful, huge accidents won't happen.

"However, the dimensions in front of the Spirit Trudging Platforms of the second border, before the first border, will be incredibly intense. There aren't many dimensions there to begin with, so when several people appear in a dimension and there is a supreme treasure in there..." Flame Fiends' Progenitor cast a glance at Su Ming.

"They'll be engaged in a battle to the death! I've come to the fifth kiln several times before. Each time, there will be powerful warriors who will die between the second and first borders.

"Once the remaining few people step onto the Spirit Trudging Platforms of the first border, the place they will want to go to would be the core of the fifth kiln. Over there, their fights will reach their most intense state, because when they are there, the nine greatest supreme treasures will appear, and that temptation... is not something a normal person can resist.

"But during the past few times, I would at most go to the area between the second and first border. I chose to leave before I stepped into the core, which is why I'm still alive," Flame Fiends' Progenitor said in a low tone.

Su Ming's expression remained calm, but several thoughts had emerged in his head. As he moved forward, he walked out of a crack of a dimension and stepped into a new one. This was already the umpteenth dimension he had moved through, and based on his calculations, he should soon be arriving at the Spirit Trudging Platforms at the end of the second border.

Almost at the instant Su Ming took a step in the dimension, his expression changed. At the same time, the eyes of Flame Fiends' Progenitor by his side lit up with delighted surprise.

Right before their eyes, an intense battle was being waged in the sky. Booming sounds reverberated in the air, stirring up many waves of impact that swept through the area. They created violent gusts of wind that threatened to collapse the sky and shatter the earth.

The two sides fighting were Zhu You Cai and the body of the supreme treasure of Xuan Shang, Xu Hui, and the others!

The bottom half of the dimension was a blue ocean. Huge waves were swept up by the wind caused by the battle in the sky. The waves roared, causing a huge whirlpool to appear on the entire surface of the ocean.

As this whirlpool rotated ceaselessly, it allowed all people to see the bottom of the ocean!

There was a statue over there. It was a strange, with three heads. Its entire body shone with a white light that illuminated the sky, and it looked like a piece that was placed as a garrison at the bottom of the ocean.

Near the whirlpool, there were nearly one hundred ferocious sea dragons. They were swimming around, occasionally lifting their heads to roar at the sky, but they did not dare to get close to the white statue.

"A supreme treasure!" Flame Fiends' Progenitor immediately exclaimed.

This was the first time Su Ming entered a dimension with a supreme treasure. The ripples of power and the presence spreading out from the treasure were clearly stronger than from a complementary treasure. It was enough for all people to be able to tell how different and unique it was at first glance.

The statue had three heads. One of them was crying, the other smiling, and the last one raging!

Three heads and one body. The statue stood at the bottom of the ocean, tempting all those who saw it, but at the same time, they would be unable to help themselves but find that there was something bizarre about that treasure.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor and Su Ming's appearance immediately caught the attention of the parties fighting in the sky. The body of the supreme treasure had a calm expression on its face, but the hearts of Xuan Shang and his group trembled.

Xu Hui was very calm. She knew that Su Ming would definitely be able to catch up, hence when she saw him at that moment, she was not surprised. Progenitor Long Hai was the same. With his age, his farsightedness, and his cunning, he naturally knew that with the draw in the connection provided by the promise between him and Su Ming, this person would definitely be able to find him. He might have the body of the supreme treasure around, but this person was previously its main soul. Progenitor Long Hai would obviously not believe that Su Ming did not have any backup plans around.

In truth, besides the bald crane, Xu Hui, and Progenitor Long Hai drawing Su Ming to this place, there was also a hint of a trace that belonged to Su Ming on the body of the supreme treasure, which Su Ming had left on it previously.

The trace was not within the body, but outside. Doing something like this was not difficult for him, since he had previously been the main soul of that body.

When Zhu You Cai saw Su Ming, his pupils constricted. Su Ming's face was incredibly unfamiliar to him, but when he saw Flame Fiends' Progenitor by Su Ming's side, he turned his head to cast a deep glance at the body of the supreme treasure.

"Xuan Family's supreme treasure!!" A fierce look instantly appeared in Zhu You Cai's eyes. If it was anyone else, perhaps they would not be able to see through it so quickly... but he could do it.

The body of the supreme treasure was the first to arrive in this dimension, and Zhu You Cai arrived after it, which was why the battle had occurred. When he saw Su Ming's unfamiliar face and Flame Fiends' Progenitor by his side, a glint had appeared in Zhu You Cai's eyes. He instantly knew the reason why there was an unfamiliar feeling in him when he fought against the body of the supreme treasure just then.

Clearly, the one who previously controlled the body of the supreme treasure was the cultivator next to Flame Fiends' Progenitor, and he could easily tell who had the priority in controlling the body when he saw that Flame Fiends' Progenitor was following this person.

A barely noticeable glint shone in Zhu You Cai's eyes. Almost at the instant he understood the connection between Su Ming and the body of the supreme treasure, he moved and charged at the whirlpool in the ocean. Judging by the direction he was going, he was heading straight for the three-headed statue, and he was so fast that he closed in on it within an instant.

As Zhu You Cai took action, the expression of the body of the supreme treasure changed. Just as the group was about to chase after Zhu You Cai, a brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. When he lifted his right hand, a ring instantly appeared on his thumb.

At the instant the purple-black ring shone, a purple-black long spear appeared in Su Ming's hands. When he lifted it, he threw it without any hesitation at Zhu You Cai's charging figure.

With a screech, it sliced through the air. The sharp sound was akin to a woman's forlorn wail. As it reverberated in the air, the body of the supreme treasure froze in midair. Xuan Shang, Nian Yin, Yun You, and Hua Yu let out screams of pain within it. Their minds and souls had been directly attacked by this sound.

"Life Inclination Spear! It-it's actually here?!" As Xuan Shang screamed in pain, an expression of disbelief appeared on his face.

In fact, even Xu Hui's mind was reduced to a mess, and her consciousness instantly turned blank.

If that was all, it would have been nothing, but even Progenitor Long Hai's Nascent Divinity began showing signs of instability at the instant the piercing sound appeared. His emotions changed drastically.

"Life Inclination Spear, the weapon that belonged to War Immortal Chang He of True Sacred Yin World!!"

Zhu You Cai was originally charging at the three-headed statue, but at the instant the piercing screech rang in the air, his body shuddered, and he came to an abrupt halt in midair. When he turned his head back, he stared at the incoming long spear with a dumbfounded gaze, then looked at Su Ming, who stood in the distance with his long hair dancing behind him.

Dressed in black, Su Ming dazed Zhu You Cai. He seemed... to be able to see a vague shadow of a middle-aged man. One who with grief, gratitude, and hatred for his Master

in him, with his loss and regret for his lover, in desolation... scattered his soul in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

He saw... himself.

"So... it's him..."

Chapter 1003 Inequity, Not Inclination 1

Zhu You Cai stared at the long spear letting out the sound that was akin to a woman's wails echoing in all directions while it charged towards him. With an extreme speed, the spear sliced through the air and closed in to arrive in the blink of an eye right in front of him.

Zhu You Cai fell silent. His body stopped in midair, and at the instant the spear approached him, he lifted his right hand to form a seal. When he did so, the act was very choppy, but it still gave off a feeling as if he was incredibly familiar with it.

These two feelings that should not coexist were mixed together in Zhu You Cai's lifted right hand. It appeared in a flash, and the shrill screeches from the Life Inclination Spear went silent.

The spear... appeared swiftly in Zhu You Cai's hand. Once he seized it, he gave it a simple swing in front of himself, and the screech immediately rang out again. It stirred up a loud bang as if air had been sliced apart, and an even stronger screech echoed in the air.

This scene caused the incoming body of the supreme treasure to freeze in midair while disbelief appeared on its face. By Su Ming's side, Flame Fiends' Progenitor also widened his eyes. He had known Zhu You Cai for thousands of years, but this was the first time he saw such a presence about him!

This presence was formed from a will which made it seem as if he was looking down on the entire universe naturally erupting from his body once he held the Life Inclination Spear. It was as if at that instant, Zhu You Cai had turned into another person. He was somebody whose ugly appearance could be ignored, whose gigantic size could be ignored...He became a person about whom the only thing that mattered was his shocking ability when holding the spear.

The shock was especially felt by Su Ming. As he stared at Zhu You Cai, the astonishment in his heart was difficult to describe with words. He remembered the seal Zhu You Cai had formed just then, and it was this seal that allowed him to snatch the long spear out of thin air. In fact, the spear had not shown a hint of resistance, and Su

Ming had even seen... the spear trembling when Zhu You Cai held it, but it was not trembling in fear. It was trembling in surprised delight!

Su Ming did not know whether this was just a figment of his imagination, but this surprised delight made it seem as if the spear had finally been reunited with its master after a long, long time.

As a myriad of thoughts spun in Su Ming's head, Zhu You Cai lowered his head and stared at the long spear in his hand quietly. Complicated emotions and anguish appeared in his eyes. After a long while, he averted his gaze, lifted his head, and looked at Su Ming.

"Is this... yours?"

Su Ming stared at Zhu You Cai and nodded slowly. Only at this moment did he realize that Zhu You Cai, who was originally the weakest among the old monsters, was clearly a person with secrets, and he definitely did not merely possess the power he showed to others.

Su Ming remembered the half of the skeleton that had held the purple-black long spear... He also remembered the Fire Spirits mentioning that the skeleton's soul... was still around.

"The name of this spear is Life Inclination. This is what it was once called, but it also has another name, and it is Life Inequity. This has an absolutely different meaning from inclination... Do you understand?"

Su Ming frowned. He did not speak, and Xuan Shang was momentarily stunned while in the body of the supreme treasure, which he had made to stop in midair. He could understand what Zhu You Cai said on the surface level, but if he had to think about them more in-depth... He would not understand them.

And he wasn't the only one. The other people were also at a loss. Only Progenitor Long Hai seemed to be deep in thought.

The eyes of Flame Fiends' Progenitor focused, and he fell into a pensive silence.

"If you don't understand, then it's better... if you don't have this spear." Zhu You Cai sighed softly. He lowered his head to look at the spear in his hand again, and a hint of grief as well as regret appeared in his eyes.

At the instant Su Ming saw the grief and regret in Zhu You Cai's eyes, a thought suddenly formed in his head. He remembered the pictures that had flashed before him the first time he held that spear.

"When holding the corpse of your lover, your sadness and the sense of injustice will become the rulers of your life. So what if you reach the Great Realm of Life? You will just waste away," Su Ming said calmly.

When his words landed in Zhu You Cai's ears, he lifted his head and looked at Su Ming for a long, long time before suddenly beginning to laugh. He laughed long and hard. At that moment, the presence he exuded and that ugly as well as huge body of his formed a great contrast.

As he laughed, he hid away a grief that no one else could see. Zhu You Cai swung his hand, and the Life Inequity Spear turned into a purple-black light that charged at Su Ming. It stopped before him and did not move, but there was a buzzing coming from within it. After listening to that noise, Su Ming seemed to have come to understand something.

"This spear is yours!"

Zhu You Cai laughed loudly. When he turned around, he took a huge stride forward. He did not even cast a glance at the three-headed statue at the bottom of the ocean in the whirlpool, which was already not too far away from him. It was as if even if this item was a supreme treasure, it could not catch his attention. He left into the distance.

"The statue of the Sea God has not completed the Fate Realm. Don't touch it. If you do, you will bring a great disaster upon your own heads. Take care."

Zhu You Cai strode into the distance until he stepped into the exit of the dimension. He fused into the distortions in the air and disappeared without a trace.

Su Ming watched him for a time. When he disappeared, understanding appeared on Su Ming's face. He lifted his right hand and seized the floating long spear in front of him, then swung his right arm. The Life Inequity Spear disappeared, turning into a ring that appeared on Su Ming's thumb.

"Well, aren't you coming here?" Su Ming lifted his head and looked at the hesitant body of the supreme treasure.

At that moment, Xuan Shang was the one in control, and his heart was in incredible conflict. He had become the main soul after much difficulty, and if Su Ming fused into the body again, he would immediately become an existence akin to an auxiliary soul. This inevitably caused him to be hesitant.

"You aren't willing for me to fuse with you?"

When Su Ming said this faintly, he sent his thought forward. At the instant he did so, a powerful light shone on the body of the supreme treasure. As it sparkled, several overlapping shadows instantly stepped out.

The first to appear was Xu Hui!

She pulled back a lock of her hair when she took a step forward. With a single move, she appeared right next to Su Ming. She smiled while looking at him.

"I still prefer you with this appearance," she said with a soft chuckle.

The second overlapping shadow that appeared on the body of the supreme treasure was the bald crane. It was still unconscious, but with Su Ming drawing it out through the connection between them, it was separated from the body of the supreme treasure and charged towards him. With a swing of his arm, it was put away into his storage bag.

The third to appear was Progenitor Long Hai, who was a Nascent Divinity, the same existence as Flame Fiends' Progenitor. That old man moved and immediately left the body of the supreme treasure. When he appeared beside Su Ming, he looked at Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

"Long Hai!" The expression of Flame Fiends' Progenitor changed swiftly, and he instinctively took a few steps back. Needless to say, he knew Long Hai. Forget how the both of them knew each other previously, just the fact that Flame Fiends' Progenitor had once wanted to devour his physical body when they were at the one thousand feet tall tree alone was enough for them to have formed a relationship.

"Fellow Daoist Huo Kui, it's been a long while." Long Hai stared at Flame Fiends' Progenitor with the ghost of a smile on his lips. There was a strange look in his eyes. The two of them were both Nascent Divinities, but it was precisely because of this that it would be easy for them to devour each other.

As Xu Hui, the bald crane, and Progenitor Long Hai left, the presence of the body within the supreme treasure weakened swiftly. At that moment, its offensive power was only equivalent to those in Solar Kalpa Realm. Even if Xuan Shang, Yun You, Hua Yu, and Nian Yin had skills they had yet to execute... at most, they would only be capable of fighting against someone who had fully completed Solar Kalpa Realm.

This power could perhaps allow them to run amuck in the world outside, but in the fifth kiln, this power was insufficient for them to even move an inch forward.

Su Ming, on the other hand, could already fight against a normal cultivator in Mastery Realm on his own. With Progenitor Long Hai and even a bit of power from Flame Fiends' Progenitor as well as the two chances he still had for Sand Earthlings' Progenitor to attack along with the God Ascension Nectar, not forgetting the three-leafed grass that allowed him to control the laws of fate too, his power was not that much different from before. He was not worried about what sort of thoughts or schemes Huang Mei or Zi Long would have once they noticed it.

He did not even cast a glance at the body of the supreme treasure, whose expression had changed drastically at that moment. Su Ming turned around and moved to the exit of the dimension. The people beside him immediately followed at. The group turned into a long arc and left into the distance, with Su Ming not paying any attention to the three-headed statue at the bottom of the ocean in the whirlpool.

He had instinctively chosen to believe in Zhu You Cai regarding this. Besides, the entire fifth kiln would definitely belong to him in the future. Unless he ran into a treasure that he was incredibly anxious to get right then and there, he would not be in a hurry to obtain it. This was something that was completely different about Su Ming compared to the others.

When Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, and Hua Yu saw that Su Ming was leaving into the distance, they immediately panicked inside the body of the supreme treasure, especially Xuan Shang. At that moment, he came to a realization that Su Ming did indeed need the body of the supreme treasure, but the four of them needed Su Ming even more.

They were lucky that it was Su Ming. If it had been anyone else, they would have been killed a long time ago and their treasure snatched away.

However, this was also in part because Su Ming did not believe that there was a necessity for it. If he truly believed that he absolutely needed the supreme treasure, then even if that treasure was created by the Sublime Paragon who was the Master of the Life Inequity Spear's owner as well as the teenager in red Su Ming saw in the pictures, it would not have mattered to him!

"Senior, please wait!" Xuan Shang's heart was immediately filled with the other three's anxious complaints. At that moment, he quickly chased after Su Ming.

"I understand my wrongs, please forgive me, senior, and please give me another chance. I will absolutely not harbor any other thoughts in my head, I swear with the soul of my family's ancestor in heaven!" This was where Xuan Shang's intelligence came into play. He did not try to argue or hide his hesitation just then.

Instead, he said it directly and lowered his stance to an extremely low degree to admit his wrongdoings. Because of it, he could avoid causing Su Ming to be displeased again when he tried to argue or hide.

While rushing after, Xuan Shang immediately scattered his soul. Once he showed his stance, Su Ming paused and turned his head around to look at the body of the supreme treasure, which had lost its main soul.

"I will allow this just this once. Do not let this happen again!" As he spoke, Su Ming moved. He swung his arm and swept up Flame Fiends' Progenitor, who had come to

understand what was going on a long time ago and was laughing bitterly at that moment. Then, with the others, he charged into the body of the supreme treasure.

They fused into it instantly, and Su Ming became the main soul, while Flame Fiends' Progenitor was added to the auxiliary souls!

This was also part of the reason why Su Ming did not kill Flame Fiends' Progenitor. In truth, he had come up with a different plan at the start, but he gave up on it midway. That plan was to have Flame Fiends' Progenitor Possess the white-robed teenager and cause Huang Mei as well as Zi Long to misunderstand him, thereby shifting most of their attention to Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

But after thinking carefully about it, he gave up on that course of action.

1. Inequity, not Inclination: I tried, honestly, but this was the best I could come up with. The original is 此枉,非往 (ci3 wang3, fei1 wang3). If you look at it, the word wang sound the same. 枉 means to perform injustice or waste, and 往 is look forward to something. They sound the same, but are very different from each other. The original translation is supposed to be: This wang... is not wang -> This injustice... is not aspiration.

Which made no sense in English, so I had to make some tweaks.

Also, there was a part where Xuan Shang said he could not understand Zhu You Cai's words.

It's supposed to be: If he could read it (since homophone), he could understand, but if he was only to hear it, he could not.

But when translated to English, the meaning is pretty clear, so I decided to make it seem as if Zhu You Cai had an underlying meaning to his words, which is what happened as well in the raws anyway.

Chapter 1004 This Art is Named Mountain Shifter

When Su Ming moved out of the dimension, it was just as he had predicted, he appeared on the Spirit Trudging Platform on the second border. The platforms had reduced from six to five.

The white-robed teenager's death was reflected on the five Spirit Trudging Platforms floating in space, and at that moment, it exuded a brutal air.

While in control of the body of the supreme treasure, Su Ming walked out calmly and sat down cross-legged on his platform.

There were three platforms that were empty at the moment. Zhu You Cai was the only one who had arrived before Su Ming. He sat quietly with his eyes closed.

Su Ming scanned the area and frowned slightly. The yellow-browed man and Reverend Zi Long had not yet come.

'It'll be even more brutal from the second border onwards due to the appearance of dimensions with supreme treasures and because there will be less dimensions the further we go. That's why it'll become a common sight for many people to appear in one dimension at the same time.

'Because of that, the fight over the treasures will become very intense.'

Su Ming pondered over this. His goal was not the supreme treasures, but the core of the fifth kiln. He wanted to see whether Su Xuan Yi was there.

If he was, then everything would become clear, but if he was not... Su Ming wanted to know whether his other guess would be true. In fact, when he thought of this, his heart clenched in pain.

Because his second guess was that there was a corpse in the core of the fifth kiln. It would be of a woman who held onto her child before death and wanted to protect her baby even after she had died.

That person was a mother. One who was unfamiliar but somehow vaguely familiar to Su Ming.

In truth, in the depths of his heart, the memories of his mother far surpassed those about his father. After all, the illusion of the memory he saw in Western Ring Nebula's foreign ring had shocked his soul and caused him to be unable to forget even a single bit of it.

In silence, Su Ming quietly waited for the yellow-browed man and Reverend Zi Long's arrival.

Time trickled by slowly. About two days later, two out of the remaining three Spirit Trudging Platforms suddenly shone brilliantly at the same time. This light attracted Su Ming's gaze.

He saw two figures appear almost at the same time on the two Spirit Trudging Platforms. These two figures swiftly gained corporeal form, and several breaths later, when the light dissipated, Huang Mei and Zi Long came into view.

The yellow-browed man coughed up a mouthful of blood when he appeared. He staggered a few steps back and nearly stepped off his Spirit Trudging Platform.

As for Zi Long, his face was also pale, but the killing intent in his eyes was incredibly strong. When he appeared, he staggered back a few steps before he forced himself to stop, then he lifted his head and glared at the yellow-browed man.

When Su Ming saw this, he immediately came to an understanding. Clearly, these two had come to blows for a treasure, but Su Ming did not know... who had come out with a treasure.

However, based on Reverend Zi Long's expression, an answer didn't seem that hard to guess.

"Despicable!" Zi Long said slowly, his voice filled with frost.

"So what if I'm despicable?" The yellow-browed man wiped off the blood at the corners of his lips before laughing. That laughter was incredibly boisterous, and it looked like he found everything logical and as it was supposed to happen.

"As long as I get the treasure, it doesn't matter if I'm injured by you!" As he spoke, the yellow-browed man lifted his right hand, and a jade bracelet appeared on his palm.

It was emerald green. Countless runic symbols were on it like small bumps. They surrounded the bracelet and spun around it, making the bracelet shine with a brilliant light. There was a powerful and mighty pressure that radiated off the treasure, and the others could not help but squint at it.

When Zi Long saw the bracelet, his expression turned even darker. He glared at the yellow-browed man coldly, but did not say another word. Instead, he sat down, closed his eyes, and exercised his breathing.

The yellow-browed man smiled and put away the bracelet. When he swept his gaze across the area, he ignored Zhu You Cai and looked at Su Ming. An amiable expression appeared on his face before he nodded with a smile.

He did not even bother asking about Flame Fiends' Progenitor!

'He's searching for an ally.'

Su Ming knew this in his heart. If the yellow-browed man was not injured, he would definitely not let Su Ming off so easily for not having Flame Fiends' Progenitor by his side, but since he was injured, he avoided this and expressed amiability towards Su Ming with the intention to work together with him.

As for Zhu You Cai, he was clearly ignored by the yellow-browed man, making it clear that he had misjudged the situation. Su Ming cast a glance at Zhu You Cai and discovered that this person had opened his eyes at some unknown point of time and was daydreaming while staring into space.

His appearance and the power he exuded made it understandable why others would not value him highly. However, after witnessing the scene in the dimension just then, Su Ming would definitely not underestimate him.

'If my guess is correct, then among these people, the most frightening of them all... is not Yellow Brows or Zi Long... but this Zhu You Cai!'

In truth, among the three, Zhu You Cai's attitude was pretty unclear, but Su Ming was about eight-tenths certain that his guess was true. This person definitely had some form of connection with Chang He, the owner of Life Inequity Spear, but he did not know how great was that connection.

As for Zi Long and Huang Mei, Su Ming leaned more towards Zi Long. The yellow-browed man might seem frank and straightforward, but Su Ming could sense an indistinct sinister air about him.

As Su Ming was immersed in his thoughts, Reverend Zi Long opened his eyes and stood up. Once he swept his gaze across the area, he lifted his right foot and stepped near the edge of the Spirit Trudging Platform.

A bang shot into the air, and it instantly echoed in all directions. Once that sound rang out, the yellow-browed man's expression changed.

"All of us are already here, so why waste any more time lingering around this place? Let's head to the dimensions between the second and first borders." When Zi Long said these words, the space in front of him distorted, and a huge vortex appeared before him.

This vortex was naturally the tunnel leading to the dimensions between the second and first borders.

Almost the instant the Spirit Trudging Platform under Zi Long's feet let out that loud bang, Fire Spirits roared in the space all around them, coming from afar. Clearly, the loud bang in the area had attracted their attention, and they were rushing over.

The roars drifted about, but there were only two explanations to the appearance of this sound within the spacious and empty space. One, there were few Fire Spirits that were coming forth, which was why the voice was so faint, but there the other possibility was that they were so large in number that their roars had begun echoing already, which was why this sound had formed.

"You were saying that I was despicable, but your action right now is the same as cutting down the time we use to regulate our breathing. If you're just targeting me, you could have just said a word. Why did you have to trouble this fellow Daoist and fellow Daoist Zhu? You must know that the dimensions between the second and first borders are

incredibly dangerous, and each additional breath we have to rest is incredibly rare," the yellow-browed man said in a ghastly manner after letting out a cold harrumph.

Zi Long looked over coldly.

"You talk too much. If you want to stay, then stay. The one who doesn't have time to regulate their breathing isn't them, but you." A fierce glare shone in Reverend Zi Long's eyes, and he turned around to walk towards the vortex that had appeared beside his Spirit Trudging Platform.

A barely noticeable glint shone in Su Ming's eyes. He did not feel any form of aversion to Zi Long's actions. If Su Ming was in his place, he would have definitely done the same thing.

Zi Long's injuries were lighter when compared to those of Huang Mei, which was why he could heal most of his injuries after just regulating his breathing for a few moments. As for Huang Mei, the most important thing for him was time, and he needed quite a bit of it to be able to recover.

Zi Long's action of walking out of the Spirit Trudging Platform early and stirring up such a loud bang cut down on the time Huang Mei needed. This was a blatant plot against him, and it was done in an incredibly straightforward manner.

Once Zi Long left, Zhu You Cai also stood up slowly. After a single step, booming sounds came from the Spirit Trudging Platform where he stood. Once a vortex manifested beside him, he did not even spare a glance at Huang Mei before stepping in and disappearing without a trace.

Fire Spirits' roars echoed in the air, and they were getting stronger. They arrived in no time, and it could be seen that the air around them was tumbling rapidly, exuding a presence that made it seem as if it wanted to devour the sky and earth.

Su Ming looked at the sullen looking yellow-browed man and put on an apologetic expression. He wrapped his fist in his palm towards Huang Mei and opened his mouth as if he wanted to say something, but in the end, it only turned into a sigh.

Huang Mei frowned, but he still nodded towards Su Ming. After all, he had already offended Zi Long from the four of them here. As for Zhu You Cai, he completely ignored him. If Su Ming had not expressed goodwill to him, he would have just started plotting on how to kill him so that he could prevent him from working together with Zi Long.

However, when he saw Su Ming's expression, he forced down the other thoughts in his head. The idea of getting closer to Su Ming and forming an alliance rushed to the forefront.

Once Su Ming bowed to Huang Mei, he lifted his foot and stomped on the Spirit Trudging Platform. When a booming sound traveled through the air, a vortex appeared beside him. Su Ming cast an apologetic look at Huang Mei again, then stepped into the vortex and disappeared.

When the yellow-browed man could no longer see him, the apologetic look on his face disappeared, replaced by an aloof expression.

Since everyone was scheming against each other, Su Ming would naturally not face them head-on. The apologetic look just then was completely fake, since his goal was to have the yellow-browed man attempt to draw him to his side. Because of that, Su Ming's existence would become incredibly important to Zi Long and Huang Mei.

Besides, since Su Ming knew some details about Zhu You Cai and they had interacted in the previous dimension, Zhu You Cai was at the very least much better than Huang Mei and Zi Long.

Su Ming chose to stand in a spot where he would not lose.

How could he dance around in circles among these powerful warriors and obtain the greatest benefits? With Su Ming's intelligence, he could stand on equal grounds when in a fight against the scheming, calculative, and farsighted people.

'We're already very close to the core of the fifth kiln...' Su Ming felt his life force flowing away in the vortex and looked at the chaotic state within it while resolve and a wave of longing rose in his heart.

He wanted to use the fastest speed he could muster to reach the core of the fifth kiln and see... whether... the mother he saw in his memories was there.

The complicated feelings, those of anxiety and longing, caused Su Ming's heart to be slightly unable to calm down.

When Su Ming stepped out of the vortex with these thoughts and moved into a new dimension, they were all chased away from his heart by the sight before him. A fierce glare instantly appeared in his eyes.

In the dimension, he saw Zi Long and Zhu You Cai. These two people were the same as Su Ming at that moment, staring at the ground. Their expressions changed, and a solemn look that had never appeared before showed up.

There was a mountain that towered into the clouds on the ground. It was blue from an endless blue light that enveloped it. On the mountain, there was a stone platform that was about several dozens of feet big and held an iron scroll!

"In this book is an Art, the name of which is... Mountain Shifter," an ancient voice said from the top of the mountain, its words echoing throughout the whole dimension.

Chapter 1005 Twelve People

At the instant the voice reverberated in the world, Su Ming's pupils shrank. He saw that a figure had appeared beside the stone platform, as if he had forced his way into his field of vision.

That figure was originally within Su Ming's field of vision, but it seemed to have appeared out of nowhere. It turned into a white-haired old man whose body was so faded away that he gave off a feeling that he was not real.

The sky was behind him. Amid the blue sky and the white clouds, the old man was filled with an insubstantial air as well as an endless mysterious aura. Since the mountain was very tall and fog and clouds surrounded it, a veil was added to the mysterious air that existed around the old man.

Needless to say, the echoing voice came from the old man's mouth. He lowered his head to look at the iron scroll on the stone platform, then lifted his right hand to stroke it gently. For a long while, Zi Long and Zhu You Cai remained quiet. In this comparative silence, the old man's ancient voice echoed in the air again.

"You are all very fortunate..."

The old man's voice was deep. As he spoke, the clouds and fog around him swiftly tumbled about and moved, as if the time in the space around him had started flowing hundreds and thousands of times faster. When Su Ming saw at this, he wasn't impacted much, but Reverend Zi Long's expression changed swiftly, as if he had seen a clue from this. He instinctively took a few steps back, and his originally cold eyes were instantly lit with a fervent look that had never appeared on him before.

The pupils of Zhu You Cai also shrank viciously. He stared at the time flowing by in the space around the old man, and his breathing quickened in a barely noticeable manner. He could see much more than Zi Long, and it was precisely because of this that the changes in his heart were so great that others would find it difficult to understand even a single bit of it.

A thought appeared in Su Ming's heart. He did not speak, but only continued listening to the old man's voice.

"In all the times that the fifth kiln was activated, no one had managed to step into this dimension of mine... All of you... are the first batch!" The old man turned his head and

cast his eyes on the ground before he swept his gaze across Su Ming, Zi Long, and Zhu You Cai.

"The fifth kiln is the supreme treasure of the Abyss Builders from the Fifth True World. I am old friends with the Abyss Builders' Progenitor and once borrowed his kiln to refine a treasure, but I had to pay a certain price for it. I branded the first of my seven Ultimate Arts here, and I intend to give it to the person who is fated to get it.

"I've already left the Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos and headed to the war between the two camps. Right now, the one you see in this land is a projection. If my real self is yet to die, then the person who will learn the Mountain Shifter Art might be fated to meet me someday. If my real self has died, then this Mountain Shifter Art will be the final Art you will learn from me," the white haired old man said flatly. As his words echoed in the air, the feeling of time flowing away from the space around him became stronger.

His words caused the light in Reverend Zi Long's eyes to become brighter. This attracted a high amount of attention from Su Ming. He could tell that Zi Long was not like this before; his expression had only changed when the time in the space around the old man had started flowing. It was as if he had not paid too much attention to it, but in an instant, incredible desire appeared in him.

This change was because of the flow of time in the space around the old man.

'Could it be that once your level of cultivation reaches a certain extent, you will naturally be able to change the space around you and then form a type of mighty pressure?! Or perhaps this is a change that appeared after he practiced some form of divine ability, and through this change, he got to know of the old man's identity?' A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes, and all sorts of guesses formed in his head.

"Mountain Shifter... is the first style in my Ultimate Art, but even the first style is already powerful enough to kill all those in Mastery Realm, shocking the laws of fate! Once you understand it, you can move all the mountains in the universe and make them come to the place where you want them to be. This... is Mountain Shifter!

"Once someone understands my Art, my projection will dissipate, and the dimension I had opened up on my own will crumble. At that time, I will use the power that caused the destruction of this dimension to send the fated person who understood my Art to the fifth kiln's first border so that he would have the chance to step straight into the core!

"If you give up, I can also instantly send you out of the fifth kiln," the man on the mountaintop said flatly.

Suddenly, the space behind Su Ming and the others distorted, and the yellow-browed man stepped into the dimension.

At the instant he walked in and saw the mountain as well as the old man on it, his expression changed and he stared intently at time flowing away at the space around the old man. His breathing instantly quickened intensely.

At the same time he appeared, the old man at the summit lifted his right hand and pointed at him. With it, Su Ming instantly felt as if the sky had crumbled and the earth had shattered, as if the universe was replaced by that one finger. This finger was an indescribable oppression and a vast force that simply could not be fought against.

It was also at that instant that Su Ming found himself completely unable to determine the old man's level of cultivation. This person was just a projection, but even by itself it was already much stronger than all the powerful warriors Su Ming had seen in his life.

If he really had to pick someone from his memories who could fight against him, then perhaps it would only be True Sacred Yin World's Sublime Paragon, whom Su Ming had seen in the pictures provided by the Life Inequity Spear!!

'Is he in Death Realm... or is he a Sublime Paragon?'

As Su Ming's heart trembled, he saw that the space around the yellow-browed man had started showing signs of having time flow away once the old man pointed at it. The yellow-browed man's expression changed again. When his body shuddered, the flow of time around him disappeared, and excitement appeared in his eyes.

During that instant, not only did Su Ming understand what was going on, even Zi Long and Zhu You Cai had all seen it. The yellow-browed man was someone who had arrived late. He did not know what the old man had said previously, but the old man decided to change some of the flow of time around him, so he would get caught up to date.

He might have seemed to have arrived late, but after the flow of time around him had changed, he had arrived in the dimension with Su Ming and the rest. He also naturally knew all that the old man had said previously.

All of this was incredibly abstruse. It looked as if it was quite difficult to puzzle out, but if they thought about it carefully, they would be able to understand it.

However, as they gained an epiphany about it, inevitably, a great amount of respect rose in them towards the old man. He was strong, and his power in changing the flow of time caused Zi Long and Huang Mei's hearts to tremble.

Zhu You Cai's eyes sparkled, though no one knew what was going on in his mind. However, compared to these three, Su Ming's shock was the greatest... because while others might not know much about the power to change the flow of time, there was no way he would not know about it... since this was one of the Abyss Builders' inborn abilities!

"The fates of the... twelve of you had led you here. There is only one method to obtain this Art. No matter what method you use, be it Enchanted Treasures, your cultivation bases, or physical bodies... the first person who places his or her hand on the iron scroll on the stone platform before me will obtain it.

"I've left a Brand on the iron scroll. The first person to touch it will definitely gain an epiphany and learn it!"

The old man swung his arm, and the world roared. The sky turned into a gigantic vortex that rotated with loud booming sounds. The ground trembled as well, and the mountain, which was tall to begin with, shot up considerably higher, until it went straight into the clouds. No one could see the summit with their naked eye any longer.

"The legacy begins."

At the instant the old man's voice came from the summit, Zi Long moved. He might have been uncertain about what the old man meant by twelve people being in this place, but this was not the time to think. His body turned into a long arc that charged at the summit. Killing intent shone in the eyes of the yellow-browed man, and without any hesitation, he rushed over as well.

Zhu You Cai frowned. He did not even bother looking at Zi Long and Huang Mei, who had rushed out, but instead stared at the summit and took a few steps forward while seemingly deep in thought.

Almost at the instant Reverend Zi Long and Huang Mei turned into long arcs that rushed to the peak, their expressions changed drastically. The first to react was Huang Mei, whose body shuddered before he plunged down. With a loud bang, he crashed to the ground. Trembling, he stood up and lifted his head to look at the mountain, and fear appeared on his face.

At the instant he flew up, he sensed all of his cultivation base disappear. He had never had this sort of experience before. It was as if he had been reduced from an immortal to a mortal. This unfamiliar feeling of weakness all over his body sowed a seed of fear within him.

Immediately after, Reverend Zi Long also plunged to the ground. Once he fell with a bang, his face became incredibly sullen, but as his eyes sparkled, he hid that deep wave of wariness which had risen within him. He also noticed the weakness in his body, and it was a feeling he had not experienced in a long, long time. It was as if even a small creature could tear him apart right then.

He lifted his head to look at the towering mountain, then gritted his teeth and started walking with strenuous effort.

Compared to Zi Long and Huang Mei, Zhu You Cai was much more relaxed. He had not flown up just then, but chosen to stride forward instead. It was just as difficult, but he was in a much better condition compared to Zi Long and Huang Mei.

All of this landed in Su Ming's eyes. If he still had not figured out what was going on, then he would not have been able to live up to this point nor obtained such great power, much less entered the fifth kiln.

'There's a seal in this place!' A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes, but he was not thinking about it at the moment. His mind was focused on the old man saying that there were... twelve people!

'Zi Long, Huang Mei, Zhu You Cai, Flame Fiends' Progenitor, Progenitor Long Hai, Xuan Shang, Yun You, Nian Yin, Hua Yu, and Xu Hui only number to ten people. Even if I'm added in, there are only eleven people. Who is the twelfth?

'Is he talking about the bald crane, or is he?' As Su Ming pondered over it, he took a step towards the summit, but the moment his foot landed, his expression changed.

A feeling of weakness instantly surged up Su Ming's body, but he did not find this feeling surprising. After all, he had seen hints about it earlier. What caused his expression to change though was... the quiet appearance of overlapping shadows on the body of the supreme treasure where he was at the instant that feeling appeared.

This was the sign that the body of the supreme treasure was about to split up, and the surprised cries from Xuan Shang and his group rang out in his mind.

While their voices were still resounding in Su Ming ears, the overlapping shadows grew in number, and in the end, with a loud bang, the body of the supreme treasure shattered!

Chapter 1006 One Person Died

As the body of the supreme treasure was torn apart, Progenitor Long Hai and Flame Fiends' Progenitor became the first to be forced out. They turned into two long arcs that landed by the side, and when they fell on the ground, their expressions turned incredibly dark.

Then it was Xu Hui's turn. She was also flung out in an incredibly pathetic manner. She was followed by Xuan Shang and his group. When they appeared one by one in the area, Su Ming was also forced out of the supreme body.

The next moment, the body of the supreme treasure melted into a palm-sized red jade that floated in midair and did not move.

Xuan Shang's face immediately turned pale. He realized that he had lost the connection between him and the body of the supreme treasure, which meant that during that instant, for some unknown reason, the supreme treasure became an item without a master!

If he could notice this, the other people could naturally notice it as well.

When the body of the supreme treasure began to be torn apart, Zi Long and Huang Mei turned their heads around to look. They trained their gazes on the numerous people that had appeared seemingly out of nowhere.

Zi Long did not speak. He turned around and continued moving to the summit. Huang Mei's expression changed, and the ghost of a smile appeared on his lips, along with a hint of derision and anger.

"I see, so it's a treasure you managed to obtain somewhere. The lot of you grouped together, and only then did you manage to get into the fifth kiln. I've been fooled by all of you for a long time. I wonder who among you was the main soul of the supreme treasure."

There was panic on Xuan Shang and his group's faces at that moment. Everything had happened too suddenly, so they did not have the time to prepare themselves. When they heard Huang Mei's words, their hearts trembled, and either intentionally or instinctively, they cast their gazes towards the calm Su Ming.

Due to their actions, Huang Mei's gaze fell on Su Ming. He cast him a few scrutinizing looks before letting out a cold snort. Derision flashed briefly in his eyes, before a freezing glare replaced it.

He was an Almighty, but he had been deceived by a bunch of puny cultivators. When he remembered how he had lost the bet and had been prepared to pay a certain price to draw them to his side, he felt that this was a form of humiliation!

"It would have been better if you could have lied your way till the end, but you just had to have the bad luck of coming here and your body being torn apart. Useless pieces of trash!" Huang Mei laughed coldly, then turned around and refused to spare another glance for Su Ming. He then continued climbing up towards the peak of the mountain with great difficulty.

By then, Zhu You Cai was in the lead. Zi Long and Huang Mei were behind him, but all three of them were still incredibly far away from the summit. They were also far apart from each other, because they were not walking on the same path.

Zhu You Cai was moving forward in a straight path. As for Zi Long and Huang Mei, due to them plunging down just then when they tried to fly, they were in different places and were walking on different paths.

"You've heard the old man's words. Since the body of the supreme treasure has been torn, there's no need for us to fuse together again. It'll depend on our own luck from now on," Su Ming said, calmly enunciating his words. He then turned his head around to cast a glance at Xu Hui.

She smiled at him, showing that he did not need to worry about her.

Su Ming nodded. He no longer paid any attention to the group and moved forward. The others longed for Mountain Shifter Art, and Su Ming desired it as well. He had already noticed that as his level of cultivation increased, he lacked Enchanted Treasures... but he lacked divine abilities even more!

While he could fight against those who were weaker than him, if he ran into those who were as strong as he was or the old monsters who were stronger, then he would find himself without powerful divine abilities that he could bring to the table.

Those that he had learned previously were either not powerful enough or were abnormally abstruse and not effective within a short period of time. At that moment, he yearned to obtain this one style... This Mountain Shifter, which the old man said could shock even Almighties!

Besides, Su Ming had also recounted the number of people in the area again, and he still found... that one person was missing!

Who was missing? Just where was he? Su Ming believed that he was not the only one thinking about it. The others must surely be wondering about it as well.

Since he could not figure it out, he decided to bury this matter in his heart. He lifted his head to look at the summit and walked towards it. As he continued moving, the mighty pressure from the peak of the mountain became increasingly stronger. It was not the type of power that would make a person break down and collapse, but a power that could disintegrate cultivation bases and turn powerful warriors into mortals.

And it was clearly hard mortals to walk up this mountain.

As time trickled by, the other people behind Su Ming also chose to climb up the mountain. Xuan Shang and his group stuck close to each other and moved forward with great difficulty. Xu Hui was panting while moving forward with gritted teeth as well.

Since Long Hai and Huo Kui were both Nascent Divinities, they had it much easier compared to the others when they moved forward. In fact, the mighty pressure from the mountain was much less to the both of them compared to everyone else.

Because of that, the two of them were much faster than everyone else. Even though they were the last to move, they were already moving side-by-side with Su Ming, and were only hundreds of feet away from Zhu You Cai.

As time continued passing and the group climbed up the mountainside, Huo Kui and Progenitor Long Hai surpassed Zhu You Cai and became the people closest to the summit.

Their expressions were different, but both had excitement in their hearts. They continued climbing upwards as if they could see the iron scroll on the stone platform waiting for their arrival.

Zi Long's expression was dark, but he persevered with gritted teeth. Zhu You Cai frowned for a moment, but after a bit of hesitation, he shook his head and chose not to speak. As for Huang Mei, a cold sneer appeared at the corners of his lips.

He did not believe that there would be such a loophole in this place that would allow Nascent Divinities to move with greater ease.

At that moment, the mountain shuddered. It looked as if the whole place had started swaying, and a powerful rebound spread out.

Su Ming's body swayed. At that moment, he had a strong feeling that the mountain he was climbing was not in fact a mountain, but a living ferocious beast. When it moved, he felt as if he was about to be flung off.

His expression changing, Su Ming gripped tightly onto a mountain rock. His fingers had already turned white, but his grip was very steady. Even though he had lost his cultivation base and become similar to a mortal... Su Ming was not unfamiliar with climbing mountains.

He grew up in Dark Mountain Tribe when he was young, and before he practiced the Ways of the Berserkers, the mountains in that place were his playground, which was why his reaction was incredibly quick. Once he seized the rock, he pressed his body tightly against the mountain wall and simply allowed that mountain to move about while remaining still.

If he could do this, then the others could do the same, but the expressions of Long Hai and Huo Kui at the forefront changed drastically. They noticed that when the mountain began swaying, their Nascent Divinities began swiftly withering away. This discovery immediately made them let go of the rocks they were gripping onto, and their bodies plummeted to the ground. In an instant, they became the last. Only when the mountain stopped swaying did they continue climbing upwards with a touch of hesitation.

However, this was just the first wave of tremors!

After about the time it takes for an incense stick to burn, the second wave of tremors arrived. They were several times stronger than before. The mountain swayed, and muffled booming sounds echoed in the air. All those climbing instantly stopped. With

ashen complexions, they gripped onto rocks and only continued climbing when the swaying stopped after several breaths.

If this was all there was and they continued like this, the mountain... would not be that hard to climb.

However... when the group managed to conquer about three-tenths of the mountain's height, the ground below them suddenly changed. It disappeared. Booming sounds echoed in the air, causing all the people to lower their heads and fix their gazes at the spot below them. Their pupils shrank at the same time, and it was especially so for Xuan Shang and his group. Their expressions changed drastically.

There was no longer any land beneath them, only a pitch black canyon, which was filled with the aura of death. There was also a vortex that rotated with loud booming sounds. It looked incredibly terrifying.

If they still possessed their cultivation bases, they would not be bothered, but right then, their cultivation bases were gone, leaving them no different from mortals. If they slipped...

As the crowd fell into pensive silence, the third wave of tremors arrived.

They were much stronger than the previous two times, and they did not last for just several breaths, but nearly twenty. Within Xuan Shang's group, Nian Yin was the one who suffered the worst luck. The mountain rock he held onto shattered, and he plunged into the vortex below.

His face was pale. When shrill screams escaped from his mouth, his body sank into the pitch black vortex. The sound of chewing and screams of pain came from within, and then, they abruptly became silent.

This scene not only caused Su Ming to feel a chill down his spine, even Zi Long and Huang Mei immediately felt their skins crawl as they stared at the canyon below them.

"Eleven left," an ancient voice stated from the distant summit, filled with endless indifference.

"Senior, you previously mentioned that no one managed to come here before, so it's only obvious that coming to this dimension requires luck and chance. If we die here in the canyon, then who will learn your Mountain Shifter Art?! You'll also need to wait for another eternity!" Huang Mei immediately shouted.

"Did I say that? Then I must have remembered incorrectly. Before you, there were also some others who came to this place... but they were not fated for this Art," the old man said calmly from the summit.

Huang Mei found himself speechless for a long period of time after that.

He was not the only one, the others also fell silent. The old man's words and a cultivator's death all turned into a dark shadow that loomed over the entire mountain and shrouded each of their hearts.

In silence, Zhu You Cai quietly lifted his hand and continued climbing. Zi Long and Huang Mei also continued heading towards the peak in silence. This was their only goal.

At that moment, Xu Hui was already ahead of Xuan Shang and his group. With gritted teeth, she continued moving upwards bit by bit. The disappearance of her cultivation base and the feeling of becoming mortal made her remember all that had happened to her during her childhood.

Suddenly, the fourth wave of tremors arrived with a bang and an intensity that far surpassed the previous few waves. It was also at that instant that Xu Hui had lifted her right hand in preparation to grab a mountain rock ahead of herself.

However, the swaying of the mountain caused her to seize empty air, and her body was flung outwards, into the vortex below her that had caught Nian Yin as well.

Below her were Xuan Shang, Hua Yu, and Yun You. If Xuan Shang extended his hand, he would have had the chance of catching her, but he hesitated for a moment, and Xu Hui passed by him.

Her expression was calm. She looked at Su Ming on the mountain, sighed softly, then closed her eyes.

Chapter 1007 I... Won't Die!

Xu Hui did not make a single sound. At the moment she closed her eyes, she saw Su Ming lift his hand to continue climbing.

She could call for help, but she did not. In this perilous mountain where no one possessed any sort of power any longer, what would Su Ming choose if she cried out for help?

If he ignored her... then her heart would hurt badly. That pain would be mixed with bitterness, along with a deep wave of disappointment and sadness.

However... if Su Ming chose to save her, she believed that there would only be death waiting for him. If he was to die like this, then Xu Hui would rather he chose to ignore her.

That was why she did not call out. At the moment she closed her eyes, she also tightly shut her mouth.

Vaguely, Xu Hui seemed to be able to see the darkness of twilight closing in on her, and in the mid of it all, a lone ship swaying about. A thin moon was fading away. Petals were scattered on the ground. The man left into the distance, leaving only the image of his back for her.

Past the wind and past the mountain, she watched his lone back gradually leave into the distance...

Partings always came suddenly and made others unable to find the time to get used to and accept it, though in the end, they had to accept it.

On the Three-Life Stone was a beautiful but morose flower of reincarnation, and whoever passed it would reach the spirit's Nirvana. The desolate and drawn out wails from the River of Forgotten Love symbolized... reaching the end of the world, and it was the place where all relationships would come to an end.

Xu Hui's body plunged down. At the instant she closed her eyes, for some unknown reason, Su Ming's heart trembled. He did not notice Xu Hui falling, because the swaying in the mountain caused him to be unable to think about anything else. The reason his heart trembled was because Zhu You Cai had turned his head back at that moment, and he sighed.

This sigh seemed to have fused together with the sigh from below him, and during that instant, it moved Su Ming's soul and caused him to lower his head with a trembling heart. He saw...

... her with her eyes closed, her mouth shut. She was a petite figure by then akin to a kite with its string snapped plunging into the canyon.

If Su Ming still had his cultivation base with him, he would use his power to save Xu Hui.

Even if he did not have it, but still had his inborn ability, he would change the flow of time so that she would stop falling.

But he no longer had his cultivation base with him, and neither did he have his inborn ability. At that moment, Su Ming was like a normal person, a mortal.

That was why he let go.

He did not let go of his grip over Xu Hui in his heart, but the grip he had on the mountain rock. At the instant he did so, his body plunged down into the canyon below him.

It was just like when he had wanted to capture Yu Xuan's unconscious body when she fell in the distance in the land of Berserkers and how when he wanted to capture Bai Su's body while she dissipated with a sad but beautiful smile. Yet in the end, he had only been left with a lock of hair fluttering in his hand. One to his left, one to his right. One in front of him, one behind him.

In the end, he did not manage to catch a single one of them. What he seized was just the endless pain in the depths of his heart.

That was why he did not think nor hesitate this time. There were certain things that one might lose the courage to do once they thought about it, and once they hesitated, they might come to regret it for the rest of their life.

Sometimes, one had to move based on instinct and walk down a path... where one would not regret anything, and it would be enough.

'If you can close your eyes and shut your mouth to not cry out for help so as not to affect me, are willing to fall into the depths of hell alone, parting with me, and can even sigh in such a light manner after that, still unwilling to let me notice you, then...

'I can lower the hand reaching for heaven. If I can't capture you... then I will fall to hell together with you.'

The release of Su Ming's grip on the stone and his subsequent fall was so sudden that the other people were left stunned. When they lowered their heads, they saw the shadow of Xu Hui being devoured by the vortex in the canyon.

Su Ming watched her falling body come closer to him. To fall faster, he used his dexterity to catch a protruding piece of mountain rock to use it to provide a boost to his speed.

As the mountain swayed, Su Ming used the force of it to push his body forward, thereby becoming even faster. At that speed, he almost instantly reached the vortex in the canyon.

This was a place filled with fog and muffled bangs. When Su Ming saw the falling Xu Hui, he stomped fiercely on the wall beside him, becoming so fast that he closed in on her with a loud whoosh and caught her in his arms.

The two of them fell together into the seemingly endless canyon.

At the instant Xu Hui was held, the familiar presence and warmth beside her caused her to open her eyes and look at Su Ming.

He was also looking at her.

The two of them stared into each other's eyes while they fell amid the moaning wind.

There were people in the world who would never voice their affections, but the affection that lay in the depths of their hearts was such that if one understood it, they would be able to smile for the rest of their lives.

There were also people who always smiled. The mature charm of it might make one look like an elder sibling, but one should not be fooled by the gentleness. What was hidden behind that gentle demeanor was the other side of the personality. Yet no matter which side was shown, both of them would choose to adhere to the resolve in the heart and walk to the end of their path with unrelenting determination.

'If you go to the sky, then I will stay by your side right before everyone's eyes. If you go to hell, then I will stay by your side and sink with you.'

'If you are white, then I am willing to make myself white. If you choose black, then I... will be the same as you. I will become the darkness in the sky.'

"You saved me again... This time, I saw your face clearly." A beautiful smile blossomed on Xu Hui's face.

"Why didn't you call out to me?" Su Ming asked softly.

"I was the one who didn't manage to hang on to the mountain rock, not you..." Xu Hui also wrapped her arms around Su Ming. Her hair danced in the air as the wind swept them up. They surrounded Su Ming's face and covered his eyes.

While tightly holding onto him, Xu Hui buried her head into his shoulder before closing her eyes. As a faint smile appeared on her lips, there was also anguish within her that Su Ming could not see.

At that moment, a low growl that was very close to them reached their ears. A gigantic head suddenly emerged from the obscure fog around them. It was black and covered in boils. Judging by looks... they could tell that this was Nian Yin, the cultivator who had fallen into the vortex previously!

However, his body had grown several times larger. Just his head alone was ten feet big. His entire person floated in the fog, and he was grinning hideously at Su Ming and Xu Hui.

The fog dissipated over there, and Nian Yin's body, which was around a hundred feet tall, was completely revealed before their eyes. Su Ming saw countless boils covering his skin. In fact, quite many of them had burst, and yellow liquid was leaking out of them. There was also a thick, foul stench spreading through the area.

With a low growl, Nian Yin charged towards Su Ming and pounced on him.

He opened his mouth wide, dragging out a large number of strands formed by sticky liquid in the process, making him look an incredibly hideous sight. At the same time, he looked as if he wanted to devour Su Ming and Xu Hui in one go.

Su Ming's heart trembled, but he had lost all his power, and there was simply no way he could fight back. When he saw that the ferocious beast in which Nian Yin had turned was closing in on him, a huge hand similarly covered in boils shot out from the fog to seize Nian Yin's body, and it yanked him back.

Nian Yin's hundred something feet tall body tumbled backwards swiftly. Once he was flung away, a ferocious beast that was several hundreds of feet tall and much bigger than Nian Yin appeared from the fog.

This creature had also once been a cultivator, but he was even bigger. There were countless boils on his body as well as veins popping up on his skin. As he roared, his eyes turned bloodshot. He glared at Su Ming with madness and pain in his eyes.

"You... are mine!" he shouted out and rushed at Su Ming.

At that instant, Su Ming saw around a dozen something of these ferocious beasts that were originally cultivators coming out from the fog.

Clearly, these people were all those who had fallen into the vortex when they came to the mountain in the past. For some unknown reason, after they died, they became existences that were neither human nor monsters.

If Su Ming still had his cultivation base with him, he would not be bothered by these ferocious spirits that might or might not be dead. However, he was as feeble as a mortal at that moment. It was the same for his physical body. Forget a dozen something of them, he did not have hope of fighting against even one of them.

The ferocious beast that just shouted out his claim rushed towards Su Ming with a roar. The dozen something ferocious spirits by the side along, with Nian Yin who had been pushed aside just then, also roared and charged over.

Su Ming sighed and looked at Xu Hui. She also looked at him before closing her eyes.

Yet at the moment she did so, a low roar suddenly came from above the abyss.

"Catch this!"

After those words, a gigantic chain shot into the canyon, straight towards Su Ming. It closed in on them in an instant, and Su Ming lifted his right hand to grab it. At the moment he caught it, a huge force came through the chain from above and pulled Su Ming and Xu Hui upwards.

While roaring even louder, the dozen something ferocious spirits rushed forward together. If they continued with this pace, then as the chain continued pulling them upwards at that swift speed, Su Ming and Xu Hui would have a certain amount of chance of rushing out of the canyon.

But the moment the chain started moving faster, it suddenly paused for a moment.

"Huang Mei, what's the meaning of this?!" An enraged voice came from above again. It was the same voice as before, but this time, it was much clearer. It was... Zhu You Cai's voice.

Due to the chain freezing, the ferocious spirits' roars closed in. Just when they were about to pounce on them, Xu Hui opened her eyes and cast a deep look at Su Ming before shoving him away so that she would leave his embrace and die in the ferocious beasts' mouths. Then... Su Ming would have a chance of leaving the place with the chain.

This was her choice.

Su Ming's heart trembled. When he saw that Xu Hui's body had left his arms, he moved while still holding tightly onto the chain with his left hand and caught her shoulder with his right hand. Without any hesitation, he pulled Xu Hui back before binding her body with the chain in his left hand and tying a knot around her.

"Wait for me up there. This is my kiln. I... won't die!"

Once Su Ming finished saying this, he used every ounce of his strength to shove Xu Hui, whose face was filled with anxiety, upwards.

1. Three-Life Stone: A crimson stone located at the end of Naihe Bridge/Helpless Bridge. The three lives are a person's three lives, his past life, his present life, and his future life. When people die, they walk past this stone, and if they carve their name on it with someone else at the same time, they will be together in their future life/next life. So if lovers carve their names on the stone together, they will still be together in their next lives.

2. The River of Forgotten Love: In the Chinese version of hell, the Naihe Bridge/Helpless Bridge is set over the River of Forgetfulness. All people who die have to cross it to head to their next lives.

Chapter 1008 The Gate to Enter the Earth!

"Pull the chain!" Su Ming roared. At the same time he pushed Xu Hui upwards, he let go of his grip on the chain, and his body plunged down again. Within an instant, the

ferocious spirits rushed towards Su Ming at the same time and submerged his figure in the canyon.

The chain was pulled upwards swiftly, while Xu Hui simply allowed the chain to rise with a stupefied expression on her face. There were no tears in her eyes, but there was a blank look that made it seem like she no longer had a soul.

The chain whistled as it moved up. Without the ferocious spirits chasing after, it swiftly moved through the layers of fog in the vortex. When it was yanked out of the canyon, Xu Hui saw the sky, the mountain, and also Zhu You Cai holding the other end of the chain.

There was also Huang Mei standing by the side with a dark expression on his face, along with a trickle of blood at the corners of his lips. A black dagger was in his hand. That dagger should have been something that he had on his person and not in his storage bag, or else he would not have been able to take it out.

"He..." When the chain was brought up, Xu Hui seized a mountain rock and dipped her head down quietly. When she looked down, Zhu You Cai sighed, and he did not finish his sentence.

"He won't die." After some time, Xu Hui whispered a few words as if she was answering Zhu You Cai, but it also seemed like she was saying those words to herself.

A barely noticeable glint shone in Progenitor Long Hai's eyes. He could have taken action before, but he did not. After all, even though he owed Su Ming a big favor for saving his life, the oath he swore was not something small. If the youth died like this, then it would be good for Long Hai.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor was also deriving pleasure from Su Ming's misfortune. A cold sneer was at the corners of his lips.

Xuan Shang, Yun You, and Hua Yu let out breaths of relief in their hearts. The mighty pressure Su Ming exerted on them had become so strong that it had reached an extent that he could control their thoughts, and it had all happened without their knowledge.

"Won't die? The canyon beneath the mountain is filled with a sinister aura, along with a thick aura of death. Forget him, even if I fell in there, I would also die," Huang Mei said flatly with a cold smile.

The others might not have said anything, but they agreed wholeheartedly to his words. Nian Yin and Su Ming's fall frightened them to no end. They did not know... who the next one might be.

Xu Hui did not speak. She glanced at the canyon beneath her, watching it for a time silently. In her head were the words Su Ming had told her before he let go.

She made up her mind. If Su Ming did not appear in the end, she would fall into the canyon once more. Even if she was going to become a hideous ferocious spirit, she would still rather be with Su Ming.

That was why she did not react a single bit to the other people's words.

Soon, Huang Mei's expression changed. He lifted his head to stare at the distant summit above him. He was not the only one. Reverend Zi Long also frowned and cast a glance at the summit before becoming absorbed in his thoughts.

Zhu You Cai should have been the first to discover this abnormality. He cast a glance at Xu Hui and remembered the certainty in her voice when she spoke just then.

Gradually, Progenitor Long Hai and Huo Kui also revealed changes in their expressions. In the end, when even Xuan Shang, Hua Yu, and Yun You reacted to the situation, their expressions turned dark.

Because... when Nian Yin plunged into the canyon, the old man at the summit mentioned that there were eleven of them left. Logically, he should have mentioned that there were ten of them left by then.

However, he did not say a single word. The meaning behind it left everyone uncertain.

Time trickled by, but the old man at the summit still not say a single thing. Thus, everyone continued to climb the mountain which occasionally swayed at a much greater intensity than before.

.....

In the canyon under the mountain, Su Ming closed his eyes. His memory was frozen at the moment he plunged down and was surrounded by a bunch of hideous ferocious spirits. Due to intense pain, he lost his consciousness.

Before that though, he could sense that his body was being continuously torn.

He had no idea how much time had passed. When he opened his eyes, he found himself lying in a puddle of murky water. Ripples would occasionally spread out on the surface, and a rotten stench would fill the area.

"There is truth in heaven, and there are gates to the depths of earth. You may step onto the road to heaven, and you may stare at the distant land." An old voice reverberated in all directions, causing Su Ming's mind to instantly become clear.

When he struggled to stand, he discovered that his cultivation base had already recovered, but Su Ming still fell silent... because he saw that his body was covered in countless boils!

He lifted his hand to touch his face, certain that he had become like the ferocious spirits he'd seen not long ago.

However, Su Ming swiftly stopped thinking about his body's situation, because the voice just then brought him a familiar feeling. It was something that stemmed from an event that happened in the distant past. When he thought about it carefully, he could find the answer to the familiarity.

That voice belonged to the old man on the summit, which he had heard when he was beside the mountain.

Su Ming stood up, and a freezing glare appeared in his eyes. If he was in the world outside, then he would absolutely not be able to hold any advantage over the old man. However... this was the fifth kiln, and Su Ming was an Abyss Builder.

With a cold harrumph, he rose and flew in the direction from which the voice had come. When he was in midair, he cast a glance over there, and he immediately saw an old man sitting cross-legged on a black lotus atop a stone platform in the distance.

There were a dozen something ferocious spirits prostrating on the ground around him, their faces filled with pain. As they worshiped him, the old man's voice reverberated in all directions once more.

"The path to heaven has been shut for you, but the gate to earth has been opened. My Art is split into two parts... One is the Mountain Shifter that blends with the will of the universe, and it is a gentle Art.

"The other is... the Mountain Shifter that overrides the will of the universe. This is the ferocious part of the Art... Go. The gate to enter the earth has been opened. You can go and search for the menacing version of the Mountain Shifter Art," the old man said flatly, then lifted his right hand to swing his arm in the air. Immediately, fog started tumbling about in the air behind him. The ground rumbled faintly, and Su Ming saw the ground gained a murky look, because it had been entirely filled with fog.

A gigantic mountain appeared under the ground.

This was an inverted mountain that stood upside-down beneath the ground. It made one feel as if the ground was not the ground but was formed by fog. If a person looked at this upside-down scene, they would be able to see the inverted summit in the fog.

'A mirror...' Su Ming's heart trembled. This was the first time he had such a direct perception of the theory of the mirror he'd heard mentioned when he was in the World of Nine Yin.

If he described this fog as a mirror, then the mountain in which Su Ming stayed previously was the area beyond the mirror, and the inverted mountain in the fog was the area within the mirror.

Or perhaps it was the opposite. The mountain where he was previously was actually the area inside the mirror, and the one Su Ming saw at that moment was the true mountain beyond the mirror.

He could not see through it. He could not differentiate it. Perhaps everything would change endlessly with just the span of one thought.

Su Ming stared at the old man in midair and frowned before shifting his gaze to the mountain under the fog. A contemplative expression appeared on his face.

At the same time, the ferocious spirits prostrating themselves around the old man stood up. As they roared, they rushed to the inverted mountain under the fog. Their cultivation bases did not disappear, but as they charged forward, the mountain trembled, and ten light circles appeared around the ferocious spirits. The ferocious spirits closed in on the regions where the light circles were at once, but there were about a dozen of the creatures, and there were only ten of the light circles.

A fight over the light circles instantly broke out, and within an instant, all the ferocious spirits beyond the light circles let out shrill screams of pain. Once their bodies disappeared, they appeared around the stone platform where the old man was while hugging their heads and wailing nonstop. It was as if there was something that they treasured being extracted from within them.

That something turned into lines of various colors that fused with the old man's body.

The ferocious spirits remaining on the mountain continued onward while roaring.

"There is a gate leading to the depths of the earth, but every single time you fail to enter it, a hundred years of your memories will be taken away from you. When you no longer have any memories, the seven emotions and six desires within you will be extracted. When you no longer have even your seven emotions and six desires, your lives will be extracted," the old man said flatly and no longer looked at the wailing ferocious spirits. Instead, he lifted his head and cast his eyes on Su Ming, who still remained in midair.

"Welcome, current master of the fifth kiln. I am Mu Ya." The old man smiled faintly.

Su Ming stared at the old man and did not speak.

"Do you want to join this game? If you don't want to, leave behind a thousand years of your memories. I will also extract three out of your seven emotions and six desires. Then, on behalf of your father, I will let you leave this place." The old man smiled, but in

Su Ming's eyes, that smile was filled with a strange, wicked air. The indifference in his eyes was a disregard for all forms of life in the universe.

"Why would I not want to?" Su Ming stared at the old man. After a long time, a smile appeared on his face. That smile was also filled with a strange, wicked air. Fine veins appeared on his body. They might seem normal at first glance, but in truth, they were Echang's venous pathways!

When Echang appeared, the wicked air about Su Ming's body immediately turned sinister. It spread out in all directions and swept up the fog in the area before turning it into a rotating vortex around Su Ming.

The old man was originally smiling, his expression calm, but when he saw Su Ming's smile and the sinister air about him, his eyes brightened swiftly. He even stood up and stared at Su Ming. His eyes sparkled several times before bellowed, "Very good! I've only ever admired one person in my life, but I also greatly despised his thickheaded stubbornness and that pitiful, ridiculous, foolish loyalty of his. That person is your ancestor. He held the same rank as Lu Ya and me, and he is Abyss Builders' Progenitor, one of the three Sublime Paragons of the Fifth True World.

"I didn't expect that someone like you would appear among his descendants. You managed to Possess a being like Echang who obeys the evils in the universe. With one step further... you will be able to become a unique, nightmarish existence!

"Has your father never told you that Abyss Builders are to never Possess the nine great lives in Old Man Extermination's ballad?!" The old man laughed. The delight on his face did not seem to be fake. He swung his arm, and the fog beneath the area in front of Su Ming tumbled about before spreading out to reveal an entrance to a tunnel.

"The gate to the earth has been opened. I look forward... to you becoming my scion. If you succeed, then not only will I give you the Mountain Shifter Art, I will also grant you... a great serendipity!"

Chapter 1009 Your Rules

Su Ming stared at the fog beneath him spreading outwards to reveal that so-called gate to enter the earth. With a sparkle in his eyes, he asked flatly, "What serendipity?"

"A great serendipity that will let this clone of yours enter Mastery Realm!" A strange light shone in the old man's eyes. As he laughed long and hard, his words resulted in a loud bang. A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes when he heard it.

He did not continue asking about it. With one step, he walked into the entrance of the fog, and his body entered the gate to the earth.

Once he entered it, the world turned upside down. A powerful light covered his eyes. A loud bang reverberated beside him, and he had the feeling as if he was moving through water.

After a moment, when this feeling disappeared along with the powerful light in front of Su Ming's eyes, he saw everything around him clearly. He found himself standing... on an inverted mountain.

But he was standing at the highest part of the mountain, where the foot of the mountain was located.

Right away, he could see the ferocious spirits formed by the ten cultivators at the mountain beneath him. They were charging forward, their goal being the summit at the lowest part of the mountain!

A freezing glare shone in Su Ming's eyes. At that moment, he might look hideous, but his cultivation base had been completely restored. With one move, he charged downwards, and he was so fast that even though he was the last one, he was closed in on everyone in no time.

In the span of around a dozen breaths, the mountain suddenly began swaying violently. The intensity of these tremors was one that would bother Su Ming if his cultivation base had disappeared, but at that moment, they were completely insignificant.

With a leap, he charged forward, as if he was plunging downwards.

But after the tremors lasted for several breaths, circles of light appeared in nine spots on the mountain. There were nine spots, but there were eleven ferocious spirits formed by cultivators that were on the mountain.

Su Ming was the last among them. He immediately saw the ten ferocious beasts beneath him acting as if they had gone mad at the instant the circles of light appeared. They charged towards the nine circles right away, and some of the more powerful ferocious spirits could completely occupy one in an instant. However, the slightly weaker ones began fighting among themselves in a frenzy.

Booming sounds echoed in all directions. While Su Ming continued charging down, he saw Nian Yin fighting against another cultivator for a circle of light. At the same time, a powerful sense of danger rose swiftly in Su Ming's heart.

It was as if the mountain on which he stood was sending a divine thought signaling danger to all the living creatures on it at that moment. With this divine thought around, the light from all nine circles of light swiftly began to fade. At that moment, Su Ming had a powerful epiphany that when the light from those circles faded away completely, those who did not manage to enter them... would have their right to be in the mountain this

time canceled. Their memories would be extracted to become the price for desiring the legacy.

The moment Su Ming approached the circle of light, the ferocious spirit that was Nian Yin let out a shrill scream of pain. His head had been gobbled up by another ferocious spirit. While chewing his head, that person stood in the circle of light and began howling.

When Su Ming saw that the nine circles of light were swiftly fading away, the sense of danger in his heart grew even stronger. He did not have much time to think about it. With one step, he charged at the circle of light that was the closest to him.

There was a ferocious spirit that was about one hundred feet tall in that circle of light. Many of the boils on his body had burst, and some of them had already dried up. His eyes were bloodshot, and there was confusion and madness in them. Clearly, he had failed several times before, and an unknown amount of years' worth of memories had been extracted from him.

However, no matter how little memories remained in him, a faint will from his soul still existed. He knew that he could not have someone else snatch the circle of light in which he was standing and that he could not be forced out of his circle of light, or else the pain of having his memories extracted as well as his seven emotions and six desires taken away from him would come upon him again. That pain was an unimaginable nightmare to all people, no matter who they were.

At the instant Su Ming closed in, the ferocious spirit roared. He lifted his swollen right hand and formed a seal before pointing swiftly at Su Ming. With it, the world roared, and a powerful gust of wind appeared out of thin air. It surrounded the area and gathered on the ferocious spirit's finger. Then, it turned into a long arc that seemed to be able to rip apart space and shot towards the incoming Su Ming.

Killing intent shone in Su Ming's eyes. He did not move back, but instead charged forward even faster. With a leap, he headed downwards and lifted his right hand. The purple-black ring on his thumb shone, and the Life Inequity Spear appeared. Once Su Ming held it in his hand and the instant the circle of light was about to completely fade away, he turned into an afterimage that crashed straight into the incoming long arc.

Booming sounds echoed in the air. Su Ming shot through the long arc and stepped straight into the circle of light. He was so quick that it was impossible to describe his speed with words. When the other ferocious spirits in the area looked over, they only saw a piercing light and heard loud booms surge into the sky.

When the powerful light dissipated and the loud bangs faded away, what appeared before the other ferocious spirits' eyes was Su Ming standing in the circle of light. Beyond it was a twitching corpse whose right eye had been stabbed by a long spear!

With an indifferent expression, Su Ming slowly pulled out that long spear before he looked around him with a cold glare.

It was at that instant that the circle of light beneath his feet disappeared, and immediately after, circles of light appeared some distance below everyone. This time, there was no longer nine, but seven of them!

Almost the instant the seven circles of light appeared below the eight remaining ferocious spirits besides Su Ming rushed out at their full speed. They intended to snatch at least one spot for themselves.

Su Ming did not say a single word. He did not think about snatching a circle of light from another ferocious spirit, but chose a circle and fixed his gaze on it. Whoever tried to snatch it from him, he would kill them!

When the ferocious spirits were still cultivators, none of them were weaklings. They might have become even more driven by insanity after staying in this place for so many years and losing their memories as well as their seven emotions and six desires through failure after failure, but their strength was definitely no longer comparable to that of their past selves.

'This is a game for that old Ya Mu. Over the years, none among these people have managed to succeed. This alone is enough proof that Ya Mu doesn't want anyone to succeed.

'So there is definitely some other form of obstruction in the final fight.' A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. As he moved forward, he stared at the first circle of light among the seven. 'I'll choose that one.'

Roars reverberated in the air. The ferocious spirits in the mountain spread out and charged towards the seven circles of light. After a moment, when Su Ming drew close to his target, another ferocious spirit came, having also chosen that circle.

That ferocious spirit was nearly two hundred feet tall. As he strode forward, he arrived almost at the same time as Su Ming. With a roar, he swung his right fist forward, stirring up a thunderous boom and sending a punch straight in Su Ming's direction.

Su Ming positioned the Life Inequity Spear horizontally in front of himself. Once he blocked the attack, booming sounds rose into the air, and he immediately pressed his left hand on his right before swiftly pushing forward.

With a loud bang, Su Ming was forced back three steps and stopped at the edge of the circle of light. As for that ferocious spirit, it staggered back four steps. It stepped out of the circle of light, then opened its mouth wide to roar at Su Ming. As it did, killing intent shone in Su Ming's eyes, and before the ferocious spirit even finished opening his mouth, Su Ming roared first.

This was the first time Su Ming had roared after transforming into his current hideous appearance. A murderous aura that surged into the sky erupted from his body with a bang. It swept through the area, causing the air to distort, and the ferocious spirit instinctively took a few steps back. As his pupils shrank, he moved and avoided the circle of light where Su Ming was and rushed to another one.

The brutal slaughter that surrounded the seven circles of light instantly reached its most intense state. After a moment, with the price of two ferocious spirits dying, one ferocious spirit stood in each of the seven circles of light.

What caught Su Ming's attention was a ferocious spirit that was about seventy or eighty feet tall standing in the seventh circle of light. All the boils on his body had dried up. His eyes were drooping, and there was a tuft of white fur on his forehead.

An ancient air would occasionally appear about his body. His eyes might have seemed bloodshot, but Su Ming noticed that there was a clear look hidden beneath it.

This was a ferocious spirit that possessed intelligence.

What interested Su Ming was that once he occupied a circle of light, no other ferocious spirits would try fighting for it. While he mulled over this, he figured out what was going on.

The creature seemed to have noticed his gaze and turned his head to cast Su Ming a glance.

Above the fog beyond the mountain was the old Ya Mu watching the scene with a smile. A bright light shone in his eyes.

"Not bad, not bad at all. The murderous aura around him is very thick. He's not the type that has never gone through hardships before. If this lad can obtain my legacy, then I will definitely not hold back in providing him with his serendipity.

"An Abyss Builder who Possessed Ecang. Interesting, how very interesting! But I'll have to make this fight even more intense, only then will I be able to see more." The old man licked his lips. Coupled with his smile, his expression made that strange, wicked air on him become even stronger. There was even an endless wave of wicked air coming from his body.

He lifted his right hand and pointed at the mountain beneath the fog.

At that instant, the circles of light on the mountain immediately faded away. Once they disappeared, new circles of light appeared further down the mountain, but this time... there were only two!

Seven circles of light were instantly reduced to only two, and it almost immediately caused this competition over the legacy to reach a frenzied state.

Su Ming lifted his head and looked at the fog above him. He could vaguely see the old Ya Mu's figure.

Once the two circles of light appeared below, the remaining six ferocious spirits besides Su Ming let out intense roars, and with bloodshot eyes, they madly charged forward at full speed.

Two circles of light. It meant that five out of the seven would fail!

"Is this the rules you set?" Su Ming ignored the six ferocious spirits that rushed out. He lifted his head to look at the indistinct old man in the fog above him. A piercing, cold glare appeared in his eyes.

"You'll choose two among the seven, and then you'll have them fight in a manner that will please you. Whether or not the person who eventually emerges victorious will obtain your legacy will depend on your mood. If you are not willing, then you will make him fail, or perhaps you will not extract his memories as a reward.

"I believe that's what you have been doing over the years. But those are your rules, not mine!" Su Ming turned his head around and looked at the six charging ferocious spirits before closing his eyes.

Chapter 1010 Su, Xuan, Yi!

The instant Su Ming closed his eyes, countless veins appeared on his body. They filled his entire body, and a malicious as well as ancient presence erupted with a bang.

This presence belonged to Ecang.

By then, Su Ming had already had his Ecang clone descend and fuse with him. When he opened his eyes again, the veins made it seem as if branches were growing over his body. A powerful presence spread out when Su Ming took a step forward.

'Two circles of light. Two slots. Then I'd like to see how you'll continue with your game when I am the only one left.' When Su Ming walked forward, the mountain trembled. He leaped up and lifted his right hand. The Life Inequity Spear shone with a brilliant light, and he threw it in front of him.

With a loud buzz, the spear turned into a long arc that sliced through the air. It instantly closed in on a roaring ferocious spirit, who lifted his arms to seize the projectile.

But the instant he touched the spear, his arms disintegrated. A pained scream rang out in the air. The Life Inequity Spear shot straight through that spirit's chest. With a bang, his body was pinned to the mountain. As the Life Inequity Spear let out a loud buzz, the ferocious spirit's pained screams grew even shriller before fading away.

"Five more."

Su Ming rushed forward like a purple shadow that charged towards the other ferocious spirits who were fighting against each other. To them, someone dying was not something they needed to pay attention to. In the mid of the battles for the two circles of light, Su Ming saw something again...

Within one of the circles of light was the ferocious spirit with that tuft of white fur on his forehead, but there was no other competitors around him. He calmly stood in that circle of light, while the ferocious spirits around him did not even spare a glance at him. It was as if... wherever he was, that place would turn into a forbidden ground for the other ferocious spirits.

His expression was calm. It was as if there was nothing around him that could catch his attention. Even Su Ming was worthy, for he had only met his gaze for a moment before ignoring him.

He left behind a powerful image to the people who had their memories continuously extracted from them, and that effect was so strong that it even affected their actions. It was to such an extent that they no longer remembered him in a normal manner, but remembered him as if his existence had been branded into their souls.

There was only one possible way for him to do this!

'This person... has always been the one who succeeds in reaching the end of Ya Mu's game in this dimension. There has never been a single exception where he was not the winner. The wariness branded in these ferocious spirits' souls took form after they were killed by him numerous times.

'That's why he can retain his intelligence, because the reward for winning every single time... is for his memories to not be taken away.'

Su Ming's pupils constricted, and he cast a deep glance at the ferocious spirit with the tuft of white fur before rushing towards the spot where the four ferocious spirits were fighting against each other.

As if they had sensed a great threat coming from Su Ming, they turned around simultaneously. Once they saw Su Ming, they rushed at him in unison.

In the face of the four ferocious spirits who were clearly ready to work together, Su Ming let out a cold harrumph. Before both parties even closed in on each other, he lifted his left hand and patted his storage bag. Immediately, a longbow appeared in his left hand.

This treasure Su Ming had obtained when he fought against the Sand Earthlings. Upon taking it into his hands, Su Ming drew the bowstring with his right hand. With a loud buzz, three sand arrows gathered out of thin air before shooting out.

The three arrows let out the same whooshing sound that was piercing to the ears. A sound as if the air had been sliced apart reverberated through the area as the arrows charged towards three out of the four ferocious spirits!

Booming sounds echoed in the air. The three ferocious spirits looked as if they were about to dodge when the three arrows exploded simultaneously. The impact of that caused the three incoming ferocious spirits to freeze for a moment.

Because of that, the final ferocious spirit stood out like a sore thumb. He was forced to have a face off against Su Ming alone.

Su Ming was not unfamiliar with this ferocious spirit. He was the one who flung off Nian Yin when they were in the fog and was also the one who had shouted out those words.

Both parties closed in on each other instantly. Booming sounds shook the sky and earth. The ferocious spirit let out a shrill roar, but his body froze in midair for a moment while Su Ming swept past him.

When Su Ming left into the distance, the ferocious spirit's head crumbled while still in midair. He fell onto the mountain and stopped moving.

Without stopping for even a single moment, Su Ming rushed towards the three ferocious spirits who had been blocked just then by the three arrows. When he closed in, he clenched his right hand, and the poisonous wasp pierced him with its stinger.

The God Ascension Nectar was injected into his body, causing Su Ming to lift his head swiftly. The veins on his face grew denser, and a powerful and domineering life force ran wild through his body, filling Su Ming's eyes with blood. With a single step, he charged forward.

An uncomfortable feeling formed in his stomach, as if he would only feel better once he threw up whatever was in his stomach. It was a feeling akin to that of the body being about to burst, and waves of unbearable pain surged through Su Ming. Under that intense pain, he felt as if his entire body was about to burst into flames. Due to the stimulation of the God Ascension Nectar, the Ecang clone in his body... also seemed to be going through a transformation he had never expected.

The source of that change was at the origin of a cracking sound coming from Su Ming's body, one that only he could hear.

This change made Su Ming immediately choose to give up on the Illusion of Stars, Sun, and Moon he was prepared to execute in order to kill the three ferocious spirits.

He initially intended to kill one of them with a divine ability, this way making it easier to handle the remaining two.

Yet the moment the Ecang clone in his body changed and the feeling as if his body was about to burst grew to its most intense state, he realized that if he did not let it out, then this time, his body would immediately crumble.

This was something he had not expected. What Su Ming did not know was that when he saved the Resentful Wei, there was still a huge amount of God Ascension Nectar left in his body. He might have suppressed it at the time, and if he'd had more time, he could have slowly absorbed and refined it, but only a short period of time had passed since then. When he injected more God Ascension Nectar into his body, he made his body start boiling.

It was this that caused his body to be in danger at that moment, and it was precisely this danger and the large amount of God Ascension Nectar within him that brought about the change in the Ecang clone.

Su Ming did not know whether this change was good or bad. He did not have time to think about it, because as the three ferocious spirits roared, they had already closed in on him. Ripples of power erupted from their bodies, and they brought forth their strongest power to kill Su Ming in one go!

Su Ming's eyes were bloodshot. During that moment of crisis, he hesitated no longer and acted based on the will of his Ecang clone—he went along with Ecang's transformation!

The instant Su Ming chose to go along with the flow, the intense pain throughout his body descended on him again. Blood gushed out from various body parts, and purplish red branches grew out of him!

In the mid of the intense pain, Su Ming discovered to his shock that his Ecang clone, which had originally fused into his body in the shape of a human, had turned... into Ecang's real self at that moment!

The body that should be incomparably huge and could occupy the entire galaxy had now shrank numerous times to exist in Su Ming's body.

This was Ecang's transformation, and it was also the first intense change that happened to Su Ming's body.

The three ferocious spirits closed in on him, as booming sounds rose into the air. When they spread out in all directions, shrill screams of pain that were far louder than the roars from the ferocious spirits rose up madly.

Just listening to those shrill and forlorn voices was enough to cause people's skin to crawl. Within those screams was indescribable pain and misery.

In fact, during that instant, the pupils of the ferocious spirit that had a tuft of white fur on his forehead shrank. He was already standing in the circle of light with a calm expression on his face, as if there was nothing around him that could attract his attention, and even when it came to Su Ming, he treated him with indifference, but at that moment, he fixed his stare on Su Ming, and his breathing quickened. Disbelief appeared in his eyes.

He was not the only one. The drastic change of the Ecang clone in Su Ming's body, the endless branches that stretched out from him, and the booming sounds that could not drown out the shrill cries that were obviously not from Su Ming also caused Old Ya Mu, who was sitting above the fog and watching the battle underneath with a calm and composed manner, to instantly stand up from his seat.

Distortions appeared in the air around him. His hair moved without wind, and rarely seen shock appeared in his eyes. His breathing quickened, and his eyes flashed.

"This... This is..."

"Abyss Builders cannot Possess the nine great lives in Old Man Extermination's ballad. This is something prohibited for them. This child's act of Possessing Ecang was already something that goes against the laws of heaven.

"But no matter what, that Ecang isn't complete. What he Possessed is only a part of Ecang. While the act of Possession itself is against the laws of heaven, it still could be accepted, but Ecang belongs to the law and definitely does not belong to this child. In the future, once Ecang becomes complete, this child will definitely have his actions limited by the laws. He will either be devoured by Ecang, or will be separate from it.

"However... he just fused perfectly with that part of Ecang's will he possesses. It has become an even more superior life form, and with just a part of its body, it became the life form that it was when it had its complete body!

"From now on, these two have fused into one, and they can no longer be separated. He is Ecang, and Ecang is him. This is a fact that not even the laws can change. Even if Ecang is completed in the future, it will still be the same!"

While Old Ya Mu was shocked, the dimension in the land trembled, and signs of it about to crumble appeared. In truth, those signs did not just appear in this place. The entire fifth kiln was trembling. With the old man's divine ability, he could sense that the galaxy

beyond the fifth kiln and the entire Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos was trembling together at that instant.

This trembling caused the four Great True Worlds and the entire Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos to instantly burst into an uproar. Ripples appeared in the galaxy, planets shuddered, and the universe looked as if it was about to fade away and disappear.

It was especially so for the foreign lands within the Barren Lands of Divine Essence's Western Ring Nebula. The remaining Ecang souls roared together, and in their roars was endless fear and shock.

"Su Xuan Yi, you... just what did you do for your son?" The old man's heart shook furiously. He instinctively wanted to raise his hand, as fierce killing intent appeared in his eyes.

"As one of the inspectors from Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, I have the duty to kill all lives who interfere with the laws. This child's existence is a change that interferes with the laws!"

But the instant the old man wanted to attack, his expression changed drastically again. He lifted his head and stared at the sky. An incredibly wary expression appeared on his face, and at the same time, he spat out three words.

"Su, Xuan, Yi!"

A will that shook the sky and the earth as well as caused an endless sea of fire to burst forth from the entire fifth kiln descended into the area!

Chapter 1011 The Third Clone

Wind stirred and clouds surged in the sky. As the world roared, fog tumbled about in all directions. A gigantic shadow appeared as if he had walked out of thin air to stand in the sky.

This figure was several hundreds of feet tall and dressed entirely in golden armor. He looked like a warring immortal. As his long hair danced in the air, a golden face was revealed. There was not a shred of emotion on that face, for it was as cold as a piece of gold.

However, there was a long chain wrapped around that figure's shoulder. This was a chain that stretched into the depths of space in the sky!

But the thing that caused old Ya Mu's pupils to shrink was not the person. His gaze did not rest on him even for a moment. Instead, he fixed his eyes on the depths of space, from where the chain came.

That person... was not Su Xuan Yi!

At that moment, an incredibly powerful will descended on the ground with a bang. Fog tumbled about beside the golden figure, and golden light stretched out to one hundred thousand feet. Then, another golden figure walked out from space.

He was as tall, as dignified, and as emotionless as the other figure. There was also... a chain wrapped around his shoulder.

Almost at the instant the second golden figure appeared, golden light surrounded him as well. When it reached a piercing degree, the third golden figure appeared.

Three golden-armored giants. Three golden figures with chains wrapped around their shoulders. Once they appeared one after another, they roared before bending their backs. Then, as if they were pulling the chains, they started moving forward.

Booming sounds shook the sky and earth, but Su Ming could not hear a single thing as he remained under the fog. In fact, he did not even have time to pay attention to the fog tumbling about above him.

At that moment, his entire body was filled with intense pain as the God Ascension Nectar spilled out from him. The burst of force had erupted from him in a frenzy once he conformed to the drastic change within his Ecang clone.

As that force erupted from him and the three ferocious spirits let out shrill screams of pain around him, Su Ming's mind became clear again. With a single glance, he could see that the three ferocious spirits beside him were floating up. Numerous branches had pierced their bodies, and those branches... grew from Su Ming's body.

Shrill wails tumbled out continuously from the three ferocious spirits. Pained expressions were on their faces, and their bodies were swiftly withering away, as if those branches that pierced through their bodies were rapidly devouring all their blood, flesh, essence, cultivation base, and spirits.

In fact, Su Ming could see veins having popped up on the three ferocious spirits' bodies. They wriggled about, but that was not because of the blood in them, nor were they wriggling about due to spasms. They were... the branches spreading throughout the three ferocious spirits' bodies.

In Su Ming's senses, those branches were a part of his body. They were dense and could not be told apart. He could clearly sense them moving, and in fact, he could even control them slightly.

With that feeling, Su Ming's heart trembled furiously, because he saw that those branches which had stretched from his body were devouring the three ferocious spirits' blood, flesh, and cultivation base while they screamed in shrill voices.

The branches were not simply devouring them, however. Instead, they were swiftly disassembling the three ferocious spirits. It was as if... the branches were rapidly looking for flaws within the creatures' bodies, searching for the parts that were lacking in their lives to use it to their advantage in disassembling them in one go. This scene was similar to how Su Ming had searched for the Waves of Tears' flaws once he turned into Old Man Extermination after going through endless years of research, which had happened after Su Ming had run into the Waves of Tears in Divine Essence Star Ocean!

Su Ming's heart trembled, and a scene appeared in his mind. It was the one that he once saw in the Seed of Life Extermination. Within that scene was a gigantic ancient ship. With the various lives offered to him, Old Man Extermination only needed to swing his arm to instantly know what flaws lay in their lives.

This scene had initially shocked Su Ming, and he once desired this, but also knew that this was incredibly far away from him, but right then... a powerful light shone in Su Ming's eyes. He noticed that he was not that far away from reaching the state of Old Man Extermination in that scene!

'Ecang's transformation... is due to the God Ascension Nectar, but the bigger reason lies in the Seed of Life Extermination!'

Su Ming did not know how great of a shock he had brought to the entire Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos when his Ecang clone fused perfectly with his body. He also did not know that Old Ya Mu was looking at the space in the distance while he stood in the world beyond the fog above him.

As the three golden-armored giants bent their backs and pulled the chains forward, booming sounds echoed in all directions within the space. Gradually, a gigantic outline appeared clearly in Ya Mu's eyes.

That outline belonged to a chariot, one which was entirely gold and looked like the sun!

The chariot was one thousand feet big, and its outline alone brought about a great and mighty pressure on Ya Mu, causing the fifth kiln to roar and seas of fire to surge up in countless dimensions.

"Su Xuan Yi!"

Old Ya Mu lifted his right hand and clenched it in front of himself. Immediately, black light shone in his fist. As he unfurled it and revealed his palm, a black ball of light appeared on his palm.

That black ball of light looked as if it was the abyss that could devour all light in the world. Endless illusory figures shone nonstop within it. Each time this happened, a different mountain would manifest in it, and in just several breaths, more than ten million mountains appeared.

Ya Mu stared at the space. The wariness in his eyes was replaced by a powerful fighting spirit, as if he was waiting for the indistinct outline to gain corporeal form and reveal... the second most powerful person among the Abyss Builders in the Fifth True World - Su Xuan Yi. This person was the prodigy the Abyss Builders' Progenitor had predicted to be their Chosen that would someday surpass him.

As Ya Mu stared at the space, the booming sounds reached their strongest. Under the loud noise, the three golden-armored giants let out a roar at the same time. They took a swift forward to yank the chain forward, and the indistinct chariot seemed to be pulled out of space, entering the real world.

The world instantly turned golden. Within the gold sky, gold earth, gold fog, and the gold space, a golden chariot was revealed!

Standing on the chariot was a figure dressed in a golden robe, whose fluttering white hair also seemed to be dyed in gold.

This was a man, an incredibly handsome middle-aged man filled with an ancient air. His gaze was icy cold, and his face was like metal. There was a merciless and aloof air about him, as if there was not a single shred of emotion that belonged to a person within that body.

Ya Mu stared at the aloof man on the golden chariot and asked in a low voice, "Which clone of Su Xuan Yi are you?!"

"The third clone," the middle-aged man said flatly and lifted his right hand. Immediately, endless golden light converged there and turned into a long sword that was around ten feet tall. Its edge was so sharp that with just a light wave, the sound of space tearing apart could be heard.

"Are you the one who wants to harm my Ming'Er?" The icy look in the middle-aged man's eyes gained an even more freezing edge. He did not speak much, but when his sentence was spoken, the entire world seemed to have been submerged in boundless ice.

As cracking sounds came from the space around him, signs of it being frozen manifested. The world looked to be covered in a spiderweb that spreading swiftly. The sky instantly looked like a giant ice flower!

Old Ya Mu's expression changed. Just as he was about to open his eyes and speak, the middle-aged man who was at the center of the ice flower while standing on the chariot

in the sky lifted the longsword in his hand and slashed at the ground with a simple swing.

That slash froze the world. The ice flower instantly covered the ground, freezing all of it. The sword cut through the law in the world, causing it to roar, as if it had been cut in half.

Fighting spirit sparked in Old Ya Mu's eyes. The black ball of light in his right hand instantly erupted with black light. It spread along the ice flower, as if it wanted to dye it black. When he lifted his right hand, he swung his arm at the incoming slash.

Immediately, the black ball of light charged at the sky and crashed against the middle-aged man's slash in midair.

"Mountain Shifter!"

Old Ya Mu formed a seal with his hands. Once he formed the mark of a mountain above his head, he spread his arms wide open. An even darker light erupted from the black ball in the sky. The tens of millions of mountains in it seemed to appear in the sky at the same time. This scene might seem incredibly bizarre in words, but during that moment, the sky was filled with mountains.

Booming sounds echoed furiously in the air. They came from the mountains collapsing, which caused Old Ya Mu's face to turn increasingly paler. Once he spread his arms wide open, he gathered them in front of himself and pressed his palms together to form the shape of a summit before he stabbed the air in the direction of the sky.

A loud bang that shook the sky rang out once more. The tens of millions of mountains in the air shuddered simultaneously, and a ray of golden light swept through the area. It cut through the mountains one after another as easy as a hot knife cuts through butter. When the mountains crumbled layer by layer, the golden longsword turned into a ray of golden light that instantly went through.

Old Ya Mu's face was pale. He coughed up a mouthful of blood, and when he staggered backwards, the mountains in the sky crumbled, and the golden light slashing down came to three inches above Old Ya Mu's head. Then, it stopped moving.

However, the freezing will coming from it froze Old Ya Mu's entire body. The glare from the tip of the sword also caused a crack to appear at the center of his brows.

"I respect you as someone older than me. Go and fulfill your promise. Let Ming'Er inherit that Mountain Shifter Art of yours, then deliver a serendipity for him," the aloof voice said from the sky, and the ice flower around Ya Mu became even colder.

"If my real body was not in Arid Traid Expanse Cosmos, then with this Abyss Sword Style of yours, which hasn't even reached the Fifth Heaven, you wouldn't be able to fight

against my Mountain Shifter Art!" Old Ya Mu lifted his head and did not even spare a glance at the golden sword above his head. Instead, he stared at the indistinct golden chariot as the mountains crumbled around him.

"This is the fifth kiln, and I am only the third clone," the middle-aged man on the chariot said flatly. His body gradually disappeared, and even the three golden-armored giants slowly fused into space. When all of them were gone, the ice flower also shrank until the world returned to normal. The golden sword above Old Ya Mu's head vanished.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1012 Drawing a Circle with Words to Form a Prison - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1012 Drawing a Circle with Words to Form a Prison

Chapter 1012 Drawing a Circle with Words to Form a Prison

When the golden chariot disappeared, the world returned to normal, and the old man fell silent. After a long time, he let out a soft sigh, then lowered his head and looked at the area beneath him.

He saw Su Ming in deep thought while the screams of the three ferocious spirits beside him became incredibly faint. Their bodies, which were one hundred feet tall, were already so withered that their original form was impossible to tell.

With a complicated expression, Old Ya Mu sighed.

"Oh well, even though I am an inspector... Abyss Builders' Progenitor was a friend of mine. That Su Xuan Yi's growth is also incredibly terrifying, so why should I get involved in this mess?"

"But while I can choose not to interfere with that lad, trying to learn my Mountain Shifter Art won't be so easy."

The old man let out a cold harrumph. When he saw that only Su Ming and the ferocious spirit with the white tuft on his forehead remained in the mountain beneath him, he lifted his right hand and formed a seal. Just as he was about to change it, his eyes focused, and he let out a soft gasp of surprise.

He saw Su Ming moving in the fog-shrouded mountain. He was not moving to the other circle of light... but charging towards the spot in which was the ferocious spirit with the white tuft of fur on his forehead.

"Damn it, could it be that besides Abyss Builders' Progenitor, all the other Abyss Builders also have a grudge against the laws? Abyss Builders' Progenitor lived his life showing foolish loyalty, but his two descendants are each more overbearing than the last.

"Forget Su Xuan Yi, even you dare to challenge the laws I laid?!" The old man let out a cold harrumph. But just as he formed a seal with his right hand and was about to change the law, he suddenly froze.

Because he heard Su Ming utter one sentence when he rushed forward.

"That circle of light belongs to me."

Countless branches filled the area beyond Su Ming's body while he was in the mountain. Those branches shrank swiftly as they swayed until all of them returned into his body. A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes while he rushed to the ferocious spirit with the tuft of white fur on his forehead.

He had said that sentence intentionally. The gaze in his eyes could be understood even without him having to say anything.

The ferocious spirit who was originally standing in the circle of light saw Su Ming closing in. But just as he was about to step out, his foot froze in the air, and a chilling glare rose in his eyes, but he did not step out of the circle of light. Instead, he stood inside and lifted his right hand to form a seal before pushing his palms forward in the direction of Su Ming coming towards him.

With it, a whirlwind appeared out of nowhere in front of the ferocious spirit. That whirlwind charged forward with a loud roar and became larger with each passing moment. In an instant, it became more than one hundred feet tall, and it swept up everything around it while charging towards Su Ming.

At the instant the whirlwind closed in, Su Ming swung his right arm forward. Immediately, the Life Inequity Spear which had impaled a ferocious spirit on a mountain rock in the distance charged over with a howl. Once Su Ming held it in his hand, he rushed towards the incoming whirlwind without any hesitation.

With a bang, they clashed. The Life Inequity Spear in his hand turned into a purple-black light that shot through the whirlwind and rushed out.

Su Ming's face was slightly pale, but whatever he lost was instantly filled by the power of the flesh, blood, and essence spreading out from Ecang's real form in his body. Needless to say, that power came from the three ferocious spirits that Su Ming had devoured just then.

The moment Su Ming rushed out of the whirlwind, the eyes of the ferocious spirit with the tuft of white fur shone with a brilliant light. He lifted his right hand, and when he swung his arm again, nearly one hundred gigantic whirlwinds appeared around him. Those whirlwinds took over all the area with a roar, and in the blink of an eye, they turned several hundreds of feet tall. Faces then manifested within them.

Those faces belonged to an old man. His face was pale, but there was an awe-inspiring air to him. He existed in all the whirlwinds, which numbered to nearly one hundred, and he charged to Su Ming with them.

As the whirlwinds closed in, mumbles tumbled out of all the nearly one hundred mouths that belonged to the same face. The voices fused together and turned into a buzzing sound that echoed throughout the area. If anyone listened to it for a prolonged period of time, they would find the world spinning in a manner that they could not endure, as if their Qi and blood were flowing in reverse, and as if their souls were about to be torn apart.

Su Ming came to an abrupt halt. A strange light flashed in his eyes. The shadow of the sun appeared in his left eye, and the shape of the moon appeared in his right eye. Once they replaced his pupils, they overlapped with them and gained the light of stars.

The Illusion of Stars, Sun, and Moon!

At the instant Su Ming used this Art, he formed a seal with his hands and moved forward. Immediately, the pupils of the ferocious spirit in the circle of light shrank. A grim expression appeared on his face. When he looked over, Su Ming had turned into hundreds of people that were rushing towards him from all directions, and he could not tell which was real one!

Perhaps all of them were real!

The key to this change lay in whether the ferocious spirit with the white tuft of fur would believe in what he saw. If he did not believe in it, then all of them would be fake. If he believed in it, then all of them could be real.

The profound aspect of this Art lay in the heart.

"An amazing Illusory Art. I see, it's one where illusions lie in reality and can turn real," the ferocious spirit with the white tuft of hair spoke for the first time. His voice was hoarse and ancient. After speaking, he lifted his right hand, bent his back, and pushed his palms against the ground beneath his feet.

At the instant his right hand touched the ground, the near one hundred whirlwinds exploded at the same time. It formed a powerful impact that rushed towards the hundreds of Su Mings in his eyes.

At the same time, the mountain trembled, and mountain rocks appeared on all the Su Mings before his eyes!

The hundreds of mountain rocks appeared at the same time and looked as if they were suppressing him to stop him in his tracks. The impact brought by the explosion of the whirlwinds was also coming for him, which formed a net that allowed no escape.

Booming sounds echoed in all directions, but in the eyes of the ferocious spirit with the white tuft of fur, the hundreds of Su Mings who were suppressed moved at the same time, and then, there were no longer just hundreds of Su Mings around him, but thousands.

"I see, so that's how it is," the old man with white fur said flatly. He shut his eyes swiftly. At the instant he did so, he had his left hand cut his right palm, opening up a gash. When blood poured out, he flung his right arm outwards, and a blood-red mountain appeared.

"Mountain Blood," the old man said calmly. When he flung his arm forward, the ground instantly turned red. The sky also turned crimson to welcome the blood-red mountain in the world!

When it descended from the sky and the ground turned red, it did not matter whether it was the mountain rocks, the exploded whirlwinds, or the thousands of Su Mings, all of them turned red.

Only one... among the thousands of Su Mings not too far away from the old man with that white fur did not turn red!

"You are here." When the old man with the white tuft of fur spoke flatly, he turned his head around to cast a cold glance at Su Ming.

Almost at the moment he looked over, the blood mountain in the sky crumbled on its own and was reduced to countless mountain rocks that charged towards Su Ming. A large number of red whirlwinds appeared out of nowhere as well and close in on him simultaneously.

Booming sounds shook the sky and earth, and Su Ming coughed up blood. He staggered a few steps backwards, and when he coughed up blood again, he lifted his head to stare at the composed ferocious spirit with the white tuft of fur in the circle of light before he sucked in a deep breath.

It was not that no one had ever managed to break his Illusion of Stars, Sun, and Moon before, but usually, they would choose not to believe in it before they could dispel it in a simple manner. After that, the Art would still be around.

This was the first time he saw someone who could see through the Art and still chose to believe in it, all so that he could forcefully break all that he believed in once he discovered the real body.

If he was able to do this, then he had to have great confidence in himself, or else it would be incredibly difficult for him to do so.

It was just like a mortal's dream. If someone died in their dream and believed in it, then most people would choose to return to the earth. However, there were certain people who would still ferociously choose to force themselves to rise from the dead even after they were certain that they had died.

This was the power of will, and Su Ming belonged to that category of people. The ferocious spirit with the white tuft of fur before him was clearly also someone like this.

A powerful enemy!

Su Ming stared at the ferocious spirit with the tuft of white fur. In truth, he had never underestimated this person. The situation at that moment was also within his expectations.

The ferocious spirit was also staring at him. At the instant their gazes met, Su Ming suddenly spoke,

"Why do you insist on standing in the circle of light and continue to play a part in a game that others watch for their pleasure?"

"It doesn't matter whether it is within the circle or beyond the circle, it is all a game. It is the same for you and me," the ferocious spirit replied calmly.

"I have the intention to break this game, and you don't," Su Ming said once more.

"A game? What is a game? You can see the game in this place, but how are you going to break or change a game you can't see?" The ferocious spirit's expression remained calm.

A barely noticeable glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He took a step forward and spoke without mincing his words. "I cannot see the game beyond the circle of light, but I know that I can choose whether to walk out or not. I won't change because of someone else changing the rules. As for the game that I can't see, if I can't see it, then it doesn't exist. But for you, that isn't the case."

When the ferocious spirit heard him, he suddenly laughed.

"Whether it is so or not, I, Chen, know full well in my heart. If... I want to walk out of this circle, I will. If I don't want to, I won't. Nothing you say will work."

When Su Ming heard the ferocious spirit say these words, he also laughed. He then lifted his right hand as he rushed forward and pointed at the sky.

"Dao Avenue Mountain!"

The world roared, and Dao Avenue Mountain manifested itself.

"Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here!" As Su Ming spoke, a gigantic scale appeared in the space above him. A white elephant stood tall like a piece of jade beside it.

Su Ming flung his arms apart. The power of Divine Essence in him erupted from his body and fused swiftly into Dao Avenue Mountain. The malicious spirit let out a roar and rushed out to catch the scale. The white elephant landed on the scale tray, and the malicious spirit pointed at the ferocious spirit in the circle of light with a finger.

"Malicious Spirit Weighs the Elephant!"

But that was not all. When Su Ming executed the Divine Essence Treasure that was Peace Arrives When the Elephant was Here, he lifted his right hand and pointed at the sky while pushing down on the ground with his left hand.

"That which exists between the past and the future is Destiny!"

Destiny's first transformation!

This was Su Ming intending to use the power he possessed while he was in his first transformation as Destiny to weigh the elephant. The mighty pressure and damage he would bring through this would be several times more than in the past.

As the ferocious spirit with the white tuft of fur in the circle of light had a change in his expression, Old Ya Mu's eyes shone while he was in the fog above.

"Chen Bai, if you win against this person, I will grant you freedom." The voice from Old Ya Mu swiftly echoed within and beyond the mountain beneath the fog. At the instant the ferocious spirit heard those words, his body shuddered, and a powerful presence that had never shown itself on him erupted from his body.

At the same time, the ferocious spirit called Chen Bai lifted his foot... and stepped out of the circle of light!

Yet the moment he did so, his face turned pale, as if he had thought of something. When he whipped his head around to look at Su Ming, a complicated look appeared on his face.

"You, who would not change your mind because of other people changing the rules, why did you step out now? In the end, you are still a part of someone else's game. You will never obtain this so-called freedom.

"Just a single sentence from someone else is sufficient to make you give up on your beliefs. Your heart is no longer firm, are you confident that you can win against me?" Su Ming's eyes sparkled as he asked calmly.

To destroy a powerful enemy, the first thing that must be destroyed in him was his will, then his beliefs, and in the end, his physical body. This was the strategy that Su Ming had prepared beforehand.

He did not underestimate this person. On the contrary, he placed him on a very high pedestal. The reason why he said those words previously was so that he would think that Su Ming wanted to snatch his circle and make Old Ya Mu share the same belief. Then Su Ming would use his will to land the first blow.

This was him drawing a circle with words to form a prison.

Chapter 1013 Seven Seals Rune

Su Ming's words were sharp and landed in the ferocious spirit's ears, causing his expression to swiftly change several times.

In his path of cultivation, he placed emphasis on cultivating his mind and heart. With a powerful will, he managed to continue down his path without any hesitation, but the remarks Su Ming had thrown before to lay his trap as well as the step he took in the end due to his desire for freedom had formed a crack that could not heal in the ferocious spirit's heart.

One of the things damaged was his pride. It was a pride born from his will, which would not change due to anything in the world besides his own opinion. This will was not something that could be suppressed by a mighty power, because if he did not want to, then he could choose not to obey Ya Mu's words. It was just that the price for it was incredibly great.

However, he still had the right to choose.

Yet as he took that step forward, his right to choose had disappeared, just as Su Ming had said, because he changed when someone else changed their rules. Because of it, his heart immediately trembled.

"For my freedom, I am choosing to temporarily obey him. No other words can change me!" The ferocious spirit with the tuft of white fur glared at Su Ming. As he spoke, he took a step forward, lifted his right hand, then pushed it at the ground.

With it, a dense ray of blood-red light appeared on his right hand. That light spread out, and a gigantic circular Rune shining with red light appeared on the ground below his palm.

A large number of runic symbols shone at the edge of the Rune. As they continued swimming about, the blood-red light on the Rune reached a piercing degree.

"Living Fiend!"

As the ferocious spirit roared, the Rune under his hand started moving swiftly before it charged out.

Su Ming's eyes sparkled. When the red Rune closed in on him, he formed a seal with his right hand before pointing forward. The treasure that was Peace Arrives When the Elephant is Here immediately rushed towards the Rune with the malicious spirit intending to weigh the Rune and the ferocious spirit with the tuft of white fur.

Booming sounds rang out once again. Under the loud booms, the ferocious spirit lifted his right hand from the ground. The red Rune instantly rose and surrounded Su Ming within it before it crashed with the malicious spirit weighing the elephant.

A powerful impact swept through the area. The malicious spirit was torn apart, and as it tumbled backwards, it disappeared without a trace. The scale also crumbled. Only the white elephant crashed into the red Rune, causing endless cracks to instantly appear on it before it crumbled.

They were equal in terms of strength!

A freezing glare shone in Su Ming's eyes. By then, he looked like a child after going through Destiny's first transformation. He lifted his right hand and swung his arm. Immediately, the air around him started distorting. Time flowed back, and the malicious spirit appeared once again, along with the crumbled scale.

"Weigh him again!" As Su Ming took a step forward, the malicious spirit beside him roared. The picture of it weighing the elephant surrounded the area, occupying the sky. It charged at the ferocious spirit with the tuft of white fur.

"An Art that reverses time..." The ferocious spirit's pupils shrank, but he did not stop moving. Once he stepped out of the circle of light, he raised his arms and roared towards the sky.

"Break My Palms!" As the ferocious spirit roared, signs of his palm lines being about to break immediately appeared on his lifted hands. Immediately after, the ferocious spirit took a step forward and roared again.

"Tear My Lines!" A large amount of fresh blood instantly appeared out of nowhere on the ferocious spirit's palms. It was as if his palm lines were no longer palm lines, but had instead become wounds. As blood gushed out, the ferocious spirit pressed his palms flat on the ground.

The ground trembled. A gigantic blood red Rune that was several thousands of feet big manifested on the ground while flashing rapidly with the ferocious spirit's hands at its center.

This Rune was no longer round but square in shape. As it rotated, its corners shone with a blood-red light.

Booming sounds rose into the air as countless runic symbols rotated around the Rune which was expanding swiftly while charging at its target.

Su Ming flung his right hand forward. The malicious spirit behind him immediately roared and rushed out, but at the instant it did so, a vicious smile appeared on the ferocious spirit's lips. He lifted his hands from the ground.

"With the first Rune, I seal the area before me!" As his voice echoed in the air, the blood Rune that was stretching towards Su Ming was suspended in the air. It stood vertically and blocked the area in front of him before crashing into the malicious spirit.

When a loud bang spread out, Su Ming shuddered. He immediately noticed that his body seemed to have been frozen the moment the red square Rune appeared in front of him. His body came to an abrupt halt against his will.

It was as if the Rune erected in front of him had seized his body, causing him to be unable to move for an instant. During it, the piercing voice from the ferocious spirit echoed in the air again.

"With the second Rune, I seal the area behind me!"

In an instant, a blood-red Rune appeared under the ferocious spirit's feet before it coming behind Su Ming.

The Rune's appearance caused Su Ming's body, which had by then regained some mobility, to freeze for a moment again. As Su Ming's expression changed, he noticed that his power had been suppressed by these two Runes in front and behind him. His body was also forcefully fixed in place.

He was not the only one. Even the malicious spirit was the same. In fact, even the scale and the white jade elephant were frozen in midair.

'What is this divine ability?!' Su Ming's pupils shrank.

"With the third Rune, I seal the heavens!

"With the fourth Rune, I seal the earth!

"With the fifth Rune, I seal all ends!"

When the ferocious spirit spoke again, blood-red Runes appeared around Su Ming one after another. There were five Runes of them in total, but they were all connected together, forming a huge seal around him!

"With the sixth Rune, I seal the heart!"

With a loud bang, the sixth Rune appeared under Su Ming's feet. Because of it, a perfect seal was formed, and it completely sealed Su Ming within it.

The ferocious spirit then rushed forward and turned into a long arc that instantly came into the Rune. During that moment, he flung his arms outwards.

"I turn the netherworld into my hands, and with the seventh Rune, I seal the soul!"

At the instant he said those words, the ferocious spirit's body let out a loud bang and distorted before disappearing from midair. However, he appeared beside Su Ming, who was sealed by the red Runes. Yet the ferocious spirit was no longer in the shape of a human.

Instead... he had turned into a black skeletal hand that shot out from the ground!

That skeletal hand might have seemed to have stretched out from the ground, but if anyone took a closer look, they would be able to see that the hand had grown out of the Rune. This was the ferocious spirit's trump card. He fused his body into the Rune and turned into the black skeletal hand. That hand was several dozens of feet big. When it seized Su Ming, the ferocious spirit's crazed roars immediately echoed beside his ears.

"With my body, I activate the Seven Seals Rune, and I will seal you, and seal you, and seal you again..."

At the instant the ferocious spirit made his first declaration that he would seal him, a powerful whirlwind erupted from the skeletal hand. Since it was the center, it could be said that Su Ming was at the center of a whirlwind. As he was swept up violently, an intense pain surged through his entire body.

His flesh and blood were swiftly torn apart, his cultivation base dissipated nonstop, and his soul suffered the pain of being torn apart.

When the second declaration to seal him was said, a loud bang rose up with it. Su Ming felt as if his entire body was about to collapse. The sealing power from the Rune turned into an impact that was equivalent to self-destruction, and it was raining down continuous blows on his body.

At the instant the third declaration was uttered, Su Ming, who was unable to move, was seized by the skeletal hand. His body, torn by the whirlwind, had blood pouring out from the eyes, ears, nose, and mouth. A powerful sense of danger swiftly rose from the bottom of his heart, screaming at him that the shadow of death was looming over him.

"This is my strongest divine ability! Do you think it'll be unable to kill you?! I'll seal you!"

The ferocious spirit's voice appeared again, and a bang rang out in Su Ming's body. A large amount of fresh blood gushed out from all over him. Under the destructive impact of the sealing power and the whirlwind tearing at him, his body began breaking down!

His arms were torn away. His legs were ripped off. His chest was also split, as if he was being cut to pieces like paper!

However... he did not break completely. As he was torn, a large number of thin branches appeared between Su Ming's limbs. Those branches were like veins. They forcefully connected his body, preventing the tearing from completing, but the more it was so, the greater Su Ming's pain became.

Under it, he gritted his teeth and did not shout, but a crazed killing intent appeared in his eyes.

The more painful it was, the greater his killing intent would grow!

The longer in pain he was, the harder he would struggle to continue living!

"Die! Be sealed!"

The fifth declaration from the ferocious spirit to seal Su Ming rang out. A large number of the branches connecting Su Ming's limbs were broken. As it happened, the indescribable pain caused Su Ming to grit his teeth and turn it into a burst of his life.

Su Ming lifted his head and roared under the intense pain and outburst of life. As he did so, it was as if all the pain he felt was let out of his body. A hint of his cultivation base then seemed to be restored due to it.

"You're the one dying!" At the instant that hint of cultivation base was restored, Su Ming turned his head around with a ferocious growl. A strange light appeared in his eyes.

"Possession!"

When Su Ming said this word, a dark light shone in his eyes before instantly turning dull, but at the instant this happened, his soul spread out and rushed out of the center of his brows to charge towards the skeletal hand that was the ferocious spirit under him!

When his soul touched that skeletal hand, he heard the ferocious spirit immediately making his sixth declaration to seal Su Ming!

Booming sounds surged into the sky from where Su Ming was held. His body turned into a blood fog, for he had been torn apart. He fused into the Rune, and booming sounds echoed ceaselessly.

A powerful wave of impact stirred up from the ground. It distorted the air until even Old Ya Mu above the fog found himself unable to tell what was going on and his pupils narrowed.

But he could sense... that Su Ming had not yet died!

Chapter 1014 Treasured Gourd, Please-

The loud bang that lasted for about twenty breaths slowly faded away. The distortions formed in the air due to the impact also gradually dissipated.

The mountain remained as the mountain. Not a single part of it was damaged. The two circles of light were still around, and they were shining with a brilliant light.

Su Ming... disappeared, or rather, his body had disappeared, but there was a lot of blood on the ground. The blood-red Rune was also still around.

The cube formed by the six square Runes shone with a crimson light. The skeletal hand in it had already disappeared without a trace and turned into... the ferocious spirit with the tuft of white hair. He was on one knee in the Rune, unmoving.

He closed his eyes, with fatigue on his face. Not a single ripple of his presence spread out, as if he was a dead person.

Time went by quickly. In just the time it takes for half an incense stick to burn, the ferocious spirit's eyes flew open. A brilliant light shone in them as the man lowered his head to look at his body.

After a long while, when he lifted his head, he raised his right hand and pushed it against the ground. His body immediately trembled viciously. All the blood in the Rune

rose up in the air and charged into his body. When it fused into him, the ferocious spirit's body started changing swiftly.

It slowly shrank. The shriveled boils contracted, and a large amount of black smoke spread out. His hair gradually grew longer, until all the blood around him merged into his body. Once it happened, he became the size of a normal person. His body recovered completely, losing that hideous appearance of before.

He was dressed in a white robe. When he lifted his head again... what was revealed was Su Ming's face!

Old Ya Mu above the fog did not reveal any surprise on his face. Clearly, he had long since predicted this outcome, but his expression was dark, and no one could say what he was thinking.

Su Ming sucked in a deep breath. He did not completely Possess that ferocious spirit with the tuft of white fur, but once he obtained the memories regarding the Seven Seals Rune, he devoured his soul and gave up on the body.

He borrowed it to form his own again.

The power of the Seven Seals Rune was so great that Su Ming's heart pounded with lingering fear even after the incident. This was why he had been so eager to obtain that Art, and the only way to do so was to devour the ferocious spirit's memories during Possession.

This was Abyss Builders' inborn ability. However, if Su Ming's previous words had not opened a crack in the heart and mind of the ferocious spirit, he would have definitely needed to go through a considerable amount of difficulty during the Possession.

At that moment, Su Ming exhaled and looked at his right palm. He lifted it and pushed it against the blood-red Rune in front of him. At the instant he touched it, the Rune shone before gradually turning dark. When it disappeared without a trace, Su Ming lifted his head again and looked at the fog above.

It obscured the view, making it impossible for him to see what was there, but during that instant, a crack appeared at the center of Su Ming's brows. The Malicious Eye manifested swiftly in the crack, and immediately, the fog in the sky was magnified endlessly. He looked through layers upon layers, and in the span of a few breaths, Su Ming saw Old Ya Mu in the fog. He also saw the dark expression on his face.

Su Ming stared at the old man, and the old man also stared at Su Ming. Their gazes met each other through the fog.

"I won," Su Ming declared flatly.

Old Ya Mu was silent. After a moment, he lifted his right hand and swung his arm forward. The mountain below him immediately roared. It started swaying violently, and Su Ming quickly lowered his head to see that a gigantic vortex had appeared at the top of the inverted mountain. That vortex rotated with loud bangs as it continued growing bigger.

It lasted only for the span of a breath before a mountain appeared underneath the vortex!

It was a mountain that was the exact same as the one on which Su Ming was standing!

It stood in the vortex in a normal manner, so its summit touched the summit of the mountain on which Su Ming stood, forming a picture that was like an hourglass. Su Ming saw Zhu You Cai at the forefront on the mountain beneath the vortex. He also saw Reverend Zi Long and Huang Mei following closely behind him.

Besides these three, Su Ming also saw Flame Fiends' Progenitor, Progenitor Long Hai, Xuan Shang, Yun You, Hua Yu... and Xu Hui!

The moment Su Ming saw the crowd, the people also saw an inverted mountain appear before their eyes in the vortex which trembled viciously while the world roared. They also saw... Su Ming!

"He didn't die!" Xuan Shang, Hua Yu, and Yun You immediately sucked in a sharp breath. At the instant they saw Su Ming, their hearts trembled.

Tears flowed down from Xu Hui's eyes. She stared blankly at Su Ming, who appeared in the inverted mountain above her, as if that one look would last an eternity for her.

Progenitor Long Hai's expression remained as calm as ever, but his heart let out a loud thump. He had mulled over it in his head and believed that even if he did not help him, Su Ming would not take any action against him. After all, with his level of cultivation, he would definitely value him highly. When he thought about this, even though his heart remained slightly anxious, not a single change appeared on his face.

The eyes of Flame Fiends' Progenitor shone, for he was very nervous. He knew Su Ming better than Long Hai, and because of that, he could not help but start regretting.

When Zi Long saw Su Ming, his expression remained the same, but his pupils shrank slightly, because he noticed that Su Ming... was the closest person to the summits of the two mountains!

When Zhu You Cai saw Su Ming, a hint of a smile appeared on his face before it disappeared, and he returned to that ugly appearance of his.

As for Huang Mei, he let out a cold harrumph and moved faster, facing the mighty pressure in the place head-on, climbing to the summit with gritted teeth.

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. All the various expressions on these people's faces allowed him to see all sorts of things. The deliverance of that chain earlier had originally been to bring him and Xu Hui upwards at the same time, but an accident had occurred on their way up.

During it they had heard Zhu You Cai's voice, and in his words, he mentioned Huang Mei. Because of it, Su Ming had already guessed everything that had happened. Zhu You Cai had tried to save them, while and Huang Mei used some sort of unknown method to stop him.

Su Ming's expression remained the same. He cast a cold glance at Huang Mei, and the aloof look in his eyes was the same as when he previously stared at the white-robed teenager.

Su Ming did not speak. With one step, he charged towards the summit, and he was so fast that the crowd who had lost their power could not compare. They could only watch helplessly as he turned into a long arc and charged for the summit.

He was so quick that in just an instant, Su Ming had already stepped onto the spot where the two mountains connected - at the two summits!

Su Ming might have seemed calm from the outside, but he was prepared for a vicious battle. After all, Old Ya Mu had a hostile expression on his face just then. It wasn't beyond that person to dispel the mighty pressure on the other people's bodies an intense battle.

However, even when Su Ming reached the stone platform on the summit, the other people were still climbing slowly. The seal on their cultivation bases did not show any signs of being released. They could only stare at him going to the stone platform helplessly.

Zhu You Cai sighed and gave up on moving forward. Reverend Zi Long frowned and cast Su Ming a profound look, then also chose to give up.

A great refusal to accept defeat appeared on Huang Mei's face, but he was still hundreds of feet away from the summit. He was too far away to catch up.

"Hmph, I am not the sort of person who goes against his own word. Since I promised you that if you reach the summit, you will become my scion, I will not interfere with you," Old Ya Mu's said in Su Ming's heart.

"These two mountains are complete opposites. One of them is in the sky, and the other is in the ground. Understanding one of them will not make the Art complete. Only when

you will understand them at the same time will you be able to obtain the real Mountain Shifter!

"I did not create this Art on my own, but inherited it from Mountain Shifter Expanse Cosmos, which is also part of Dark Dawn Union. This Art is the supreme Art in Mountain Shifter Expanses Cosmos that governs the changes in the world. It is equal in terms of power to Abyss Builders' Nine Heavenly Abyss Sword Styles. They are both naturally born Arts.

"Learn it. I will send you to the core of the fifth kiln, but before that, I will give you the serendipity I promised you. I will definitely not go back on my word!" Old Ya Mu's voice echoed in Su Ming's heart, but as Su Ming continued listening to it, his words were filled with a peculiar air.

It was as if... Old Ya Mu was not saying those words to him, but were saying them for someone else, but that voice was clearly echoing in his heart. The people who Su Ming could see around him did not seem to be somebodies who were worthy of Old Ya Mu explaining himself in such a manner.

"Nine Heavenly Abyss Sword Style?" Su Ming's eyes sparkled. This was the first time he heard of this Art.

"It is an Art your Progenitor created after he gained an epiphany about the change in the universe within Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos. He declared that there were nine heavenly changes, but at most, I saw only seven. Even that Progenitor of yours believed that the remaining ones could only be achieved in theory.

"You'll learn about this in the future. Now hurry up and learn that Mountain Shifter Art of mine. Once you learn it, I'll have fulfilled my promise, and my projection will be free to leave the fifth kiln."

As Old Ya Mu's voice echoed in Su Ming's heart, his eyes shone, and he swept his gaze past the two stone platforms. One of them was above him, and the other beneath him. A single iron scroll was on each of them.

When Su Ming looked over, light shone in his eyes. After a period of pensive silence, he lifted his right hand and placed it on the stone platform above him. At the instant he did so, the inverted mountain started trembling viciously. Cracks appeared on it, and in the blink of an eye, the mountain started showing signs of crumbling.

At the same time, a loud bang rang out in Su Ming's head. An epiphany towards the universe, the world, and the entire cosmos surged into his consciousness. It filled his whole mind and turned into countless memory fragments that stirred up a storm in his head.

In the storm of those memory fragments, Su Ming saw mountains. Among them were Dark Mountain, the ninth summit, and all the mountains he had seen, traversed, or touched in his life.

All of them had differing heights, but they swiftly overlapped with each other, and a vague epiphany gradually formed in his heart.

In the other people's eyes, Su Ming's hair danced in the air. The air beside him distorted, and mountains manifested. As they changed, more cracks appeared on the inverted mountain above, and the signs of its crumbling became even greater.

A powerful, mighty pressure that had never appeared before on Su Ming's body manifested with a bang, shaking everyone's hearts.

It was especially so for Huang Mei. Intense jealousy showed up in his eyes, and as his face distorted, veins popped up.

"It won't be that easy for you to obtain such a powerful divine ability!" Huang Mei gritted his teeth, then struck the gourd behind his back with his right hand. He then shouted out, "Treasured gourd, please kill him!"

Chapter 1015 Why Do You Have It As Well...

The shout was firm, powerful, and filled with confidence!

Even if the sound of the mountain above cracking were echoing in the air, Huang Mei's voice was still very loud and clear, and it attracted all the people's attention.

It was especially so for Reverend Zi Long. At the instant he saw Huang Mei bringing his right hand up and striking the gourd behind him, his pupils shrank.

Zi Long had always been wary of Huang Mei's gourd. He had vaguely been able to see its origins, which was why he had constantly compromised with him. Even when they had been fighting for a supreme treasure beforehand and Zi Long was ambushed by his despicable tricks, he had only attacked briefly and did not try to force him into a corner. Zi Long could only force down his anger.

The source of it all was that gourd!

Zi Long was eight-tenths certain that the gourd was definitely the legendary supreme treasure from the Fifth True World!

When he saw Huang Mei finally using that treasure and heard him pleading for the gourd to kill Su Ming, Zi Long immediately sucked in a sharp breath. His guess had been correct!

When Zhu You Cai saw the gourd and heard Huang Mei's words, his expression changed.

Xuan Shang, Yun You, and Hua Yu knew nothing about the treasured gourd's origins, but their hearts still trembled when they saw Huang Mei's actions, because after Huang Mei spoke, a powerful ripple of power erupted from the treasured gourd.

The ripples tumbled about and formed a gigantic impact in the shape of a vortex that swept out in all directions.

"Lu Ya's gourd!"

Progenitor Long Hai's expression changed continuously, until he cried out in surprise. He fixed his stare on the gourd, and his Nascent Divinity started showing signs of being close to dissipating.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor was in the same state. As he stared at the gourd behind Huang Mei, strong greed appeared on his face.

Huang Mei saw the group's expressions, and a cold sneer appeared at the corners of his lips. He had been in possession of this treasured gourd for years and had used it very rarely because he wanted to be able to wrestle victory into his hands in one go during a critical moment of a fight.

He had originally not wanted to use it just like that, prepared to attack and kill whoever it was that obtained the Mountain Shifter Art before him so that he could snatch it away.

However, Su Ming's appearance was the last straw for Huang Mei. He absolutely would not allow anyone else to obtain that powerful Art. He would do everything he could to get that Art.

'I'd like to see who will still dare to snatch that Art from me after I kill that person!'

Huang Mei laughed coldly. He did not believe that Su Ming had any chance of surviving this encounter. In his experience, as long as he used the treasured gourd, all of those who were targeted would definitely die, unless their level of cultivation was much higher than his!

As he laughed coldly, the treasured gourd behind his back lit up, shining brightly. As the vortex roared, an eye appeared on the gourd.

There was an aloof look to it. When it appeared, it immediately stared at Su Ming. With a blink, a dense wave of white fog appeared at the mouth of the gourd. That presence was filled with a thick fragrance that immediately filled the area. From the distance, it looked like there were white clouds erupting from the mouth of the gourd.

"I, Huang, am the only one who can gain an epiphany of this Mountain Shifter Art. You're just a young boy, die!" Huang Mei laughed madly, and with a loud bang, the fog from the gourd behind him erupted.

Su Ming opened his eyes at the summit before lowering them to stare at Huang Mei. Unable to help itself, a strange expression appeared on his face.

All the people saw this strange expression, but no one knew the meaning behind it.

"The time taken for that gourd of yours to attack is a little too slow," Su Ming said with a strange tone in his voice.

Once he said those words, the people were all momentarily stunned, especially Huang Mei. He stiffened for a moment. It was the truth. This particular aspect about his gourd was something that brought resignation to him. Every single time he finished the incantation, he would need about a dozen breaths before the divine ability would erupt from the fog, but fortunately, once it erupted, it would lock onto its target formlessly, causing all those who were targeted to be unable to escape no matter where they went.

"Even if it's slow, it'll still be enough to kill you!" Huang Mei said in a prideful manner.

Su Ming's expression became even stranger. He sighed. His action caused the other's gazes to flicker, because there was not a single hint of fear or panic on his face at that moment. Thus, that strange expression of his puzzled everyone.

The next instant, Su Ming no longer hesitated and lifted his right hand to strike his storage bag. Immediately, a gourd the size of a palm appeared on his right hand. When he lifted it up, he swept his left hand over it.

"Treasured gourd, please kill him," Su Ming said with a strange tone in his voice. He believed that one of the two gourds was definitely an imitation, but he trusted the bald crane. The change that had happened to it when it saw the gourd was something that Su Ming would never forget. He felt... that there was a high possibility that his was the real thing.

Almost the instant Su Ming brought out the small gourd, all the people's expressions in the area changed, and then, all of them became strange at the same time.

Even Reverend Zi Long, with his ability to remain calm, could not help but widen his eyes at that instant, disbelief appearing on his face. Zhu You Cai also blinked a couple times. He stared at Su Ming and Huang Mei before a smile that he could not control

appeared on the corners of his lips. He thought that the scene right then was slightly out of expectations, and rather absurd.

Compared to the two of them, Xuan Shang, Yun You, and Hua Yu found themselves a little unable to accept the development of this situation. They stared at the small gourd on Su Ming's palm with a dumbfounded gaze before looking over at the big gourd on Huang Mei's back, and then, their minds were completely occupied by the two gourds of differing sizes.

'The... big one should be stronger, right?' Besides this one single thought, Xuan Shang's mind was empty.

As for Progenitor Long Hai, he sucked in a sharp breath. He suddenly realized that there were plenty of secrets surrounding Su Ming. Just that gourd alone could immediately overturn the world in this place.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor blinked. He was unable to tell just which one was the real deal...

Huang Mei was especially affected. As his expression changed drastically, he cried out in surprise, "You-you... Why do you have it as well?!"

At the instant he said those words, the gourd behind him let out a loud bang again, and as a large amount of white fog erupted from it, a small human rushed out.

That small human was semi-transparent and held a black blade in her hands. Her expression was slightly sluggish, and judging from her appearance, this small human was a female... When she rushed out of the fog, she fixed her stare on Su Ming.

"Treasured gourd, please kill him!"

Powerful killing intent shone in Huang Mei's eyes. When he saw that Su Ming also had a gourd, an ominous feeling rose in his heart, but when the small human appeared from his gourd, that feeling immediately disappeared. He lifted his right hand and pointed at Su Ming while roaring.

The small human from the gourd behind him immediately threw her head back and let out a piercing screech, before rushing over towards Su Ming. The fog beside her tumbled about and covered her body, making it seem like she was riding on clouds. Murderous aura surged into the sky from her.

An indescribable, mighty pressure erupted from Su Ming's gourd as well. It brought with it an extreme sharpness that seemed like it could cut through all the laws in the universe.

"So what if you also have a gourd?! It's just an imitation! How dare you bring it out against the real thing!"

Right after Huang Mei finished saying these things, seven eyes appeared on Su Ming's gourd! Those seven eyes blinked at the same time, their gazes aloof, and Huang Mei's heart let out a loud thump. He remembered how his gourd only had one eye when he used it.

However, when he recalled how his gourd would definitely succeed every time the small human appeared, a great amount of confidence rose in him again.

But right then, fog burst out of the gourd in Su Ming's hand. At the same time, a small human the size of a palm rushed out of the gourd. He was also holding onto a blade in his right hand.

The small human from Su Ming's gourd was very small, but he was not an illusion. He looked incredibly real, and his appearance was also very distinct, just like that of a real person. He was also not female, but male.

And the small human from Su Ming's gourd did not have any sort of delay like Huang Mei's did after he recited his incantation. Instead, he flew out immediately, and compared to the small human from Huang Mei's gourd, he chose to remain silent instead of throwing his head back to roar!

One of them roared, the other remained silent. One of them had a delay, and the other moved immediately.

Even if they had yet to collide, all of the people in the area were shrewd, calculative monsters, so it was impossible for them to be unable to tell just which of the two was real.

However, the thing that made them hesitant about their answer was the fact that... one of them was too big, and the other... too small.

At the instant Huang Mei's expression changed, replaced by disbelief, the small human from his gourd turned her head around and bit down on his neck, but he was clearly already used to this. He did not dodge and simply allowed that little female to suck his blood, flesh, and essence. When she let go of him, she let out a screech and rushed out to crash into the small human from Su Ming's gourd.

In the mid of Huang Mei's nervous anticipation, his body suddenly shuddered, and he opened his mouth as if he wanted to say something, but his face turned pale and he coughed up a mouthful of blood. This blood was not due to being injured... but from outrage!

He was not the only one feeling out of sorts. The expressions of all the other people in the area turned incredibly strange as they looked at the scene in the sky with dumbfounded expressions.

There was no battle, no slaughter, no loud bangs that rose from any form of collision.

The small human who flew out from Su Ming's gourd stopped in midair. The female human from Huang Mei's gourd instantly closed in, but the instant she did so, she trembled... and acted bashfully in front of the male...

But that was not all. As the small human from Huang Mei's gourd started acting bashfully, she approached the small human from Su Ming's gourd, who had an aloof and prideful expression on his face. Once she did so, she knelt down in the air, and the human from Su Ming's gourd... even put on an expression as if he did not really like her.

He then nodded, as if he was forced to do something very difficult. The small human from Huang Mei's gourd stood up again and swiftly shrank to the same size as the small human from Su Ming's gourd...

All the people who witnessed this scene—no matter how they looked at it—thought that the female human was showing her infatuation to the male human.

Chapter 1016 Three, Mountain!

At the same time, cracking sounds rose swiftly in the air. They came from the cracks that appeared on the gourd on Huang Mei's back. Those cracks spread out, before the gourd... eventually shattered into pieces.

"Sorry about that, but I have a gourd as well."

Su Ming let out a dry cough, then a freezing glare appeared in his eyes. He brought his right hand up and pointed at Huang Mei, and the small human from his gourd as well as his 'wife' immediately lowered their heads to cast Huang Mei a cold look before charging forward swiftly.

Huang Mei was so enraged by Su Ming's words that he coughed up blood again. The outrage on his face reached an extreme state, and as he lifted his head to roar towards the sky, despair appeared on his face.

His roar was shrill and forlorn, as if no matter how he shouted, he could not vent out the extreme outrage in his heart.

When he saw the two small humans from the gourd swiftly close in on him, about to cut his neck, he quickly let go of the mountain rock and plunged into the depths of the canyon.

The two small humans from the gourd flashed and continued after him, but a big hand appeared in the air beside the falling Huang Mei and caught him. The back of that hand crashed into the incoming two small humans.

Loud bangs surged into the sky. As the two small humans tumbled backwards, chilly expressions appeared on their faces, especially on the one from Su Ming's gourd. A powerful killing intent shone in his eyes, but he immediately returned to Su Ming's side.

As for the small human who originally belonged to Huang Mei, she also came to Su Ming's side. Adoration was in her eyes as she gazed at the small human from Su Ming's gourd. It was as if just one gaze from him was enough for her to give up on everything for him.

Su Ming lifted his head slowly and stared at the fog above him, the killing intent in his eyes growing stronger. He lifted the gourd in his right hand and swung it. Immediately, the small human from his gourd flew back, and the female human that originally belonged to Huang Mei... also went to the gourd with him.

Fortunately, Huang Mei could not see this scene, since he was seized by the palm, or else he would have definitely coughed up another mouthful of blood.

"You want to save him?" Su Ming asked faintly while staring above himself.

"He is willing to enter the earth. In my path, there are gates leading to earth, so I will naturally save him," an ancient voice said from the air. That voice belonged to Old Ya Mu.

This time, his voice echoed in the air, and all the people could hear him.

Su Ming did not speak, but stared at the air above him with an aloof gaze. It might be important to him whether Huang Mei lived or died, but compared to the thoughts raging in his mind at the moment, his survival was insignificant.

Su Ming had previously wondered about one thing. Old Ya Mu was clearly speaking to him, but no matter how he listened to it, he seemed to be explaining his actions to another person.

If he was in another place, Su Ming would not think too much about this strange matter, but this was the fifth kiln, and because of it, Su Ming had to delve into it.

Since Old Ya Mu was insistent on saving Huang Mei, Su Ming immediately decided to use this matter to test what was going on.

Which was why he did not speak. Not a hint of him showing any sort of compromise appeared on his face. He stared at the sky and stood on the summit aloofly, without saying a single word.

'If Old Ya Mu softens his tone, then it would mean that my guess is correct—he ran into someone when I was engaged in that fierce fight on the mountain.

'It is then because of that person that he spoke in such a manner, as if he was explaining his actions to someone else. It would have been due to his wariness.

'But if his tone won't soften up, my guess is incorrect.' A myriad of thoughts spun in Su Ming's mind, but he did not show a single hint of it on his face.

After about a dozen breaths, a sigh came from the fog above.

"Enough now. I've been here for many years. If I want to leave this place, I need a physical body. That boy just now seemed pretty decent, so I want to borrow it for a while. Once I leave, he will no longer be him.

"Aren't you going to hurry up and gain an epiphany of my Mountain Shifter Art?"

The voice from the fog above caused Su Ming's heart to tremble furiously. He lowered his head in silence and cast a glance at the iron scrolls on the stone platforms. Once he sucked in a deep breath, he raised both his arms. But just as he was about to press his hands on them, he spoke calmly without lifting his head, as if he was speaking very casually.

"When I was fighting against that ferocious spirit, which of my father's clone did you encounter, senior?"

"The third... Hmm?" Old Ya Mu answered without much thought, but the moment he said it, a brilliant light suddenly shone in his eyes.

"The third clone, huh?" Su Ming said faintly. He had a strong feeling that Ya Mu was staring at him from the fog above. However, the habit of having his expression not change to reflect his thoughts was already something embedded into Su Ming's bones, so he was not worried about having his thoughts seen through.

His words just then were purely to fish for something from Ya Mu. He had said those words at random, so it did not matter to him even if he got it wrong. He just wanted to see Ya Mu's reaction and use it to make his judgment.

However, Su Ming had not expected that his words... would allow him to get an answer that caused his heart to tremble violently.

"What a sly lad. But I like this cunning of yours. As for what is going on between you and your father, I'm not willing to get myself involved in it." Old Ya Mu in the fog chuckled and stopped speaking.

Su Ming's heart trembled. He closed his eyes and pushed his palms against the two mountain rocks. Booming sounds echoed in the air, and everything in his mind was forced down, replaced by illusions of mountains.

As the one above crumbled, cracks also gradually appeared on the swaying one beneath him.

More cracks formed, and more mountains appeared in Su Ming's head. In the end, a loud bang rang out. The instant the mountain above him completely collapsed, the images of countless mountains gathered together in his head before turning into a black ball of light.

That ball of light was an illusion. There were numerous mountains shining in it, and it had a vast, mighty pressure. Su Ming could sense it clearly, and he found that it was also spreading out from his body. During that instant, the expressions of all people who sensed that mighty pressure from Su Ming's body changed. They felt as if there were ten thousand mountains pressing down on their heads.

Booming sounds rose into the air, and the mountain beneath began crumbling again. When all of it shattered into rocks, all the people on it were swiftly swept up. At the instant this happened, their power was instantly restored to them.

The next instant, the black ball of light in Su Ming's mind gained corporeal form. It turned into a brand on his soul.

The shape of the brand was formed of three glowing spots connected together. There was a primitive presence to it, as if it had been naturally formed when the universe was initially created.

At the instant the brand was left in him, Su Ming sensed the existences of all the mountains in the entire universe!

Their numbers were countless. They were normal mountains in an innumerable number of planets, illusory ones that could not be counted, those that existed in the minds of legions of people, and they all formed a law that had yet to be discovered by the people in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos.

The Mountain Shifter Art practiced the laws of mountains!

"A mountain is formed of three dots ! These three dots form the outline of a mountain, and they mark the beginning of the universe. They are the source of power! You, my

scion who inherited the Art from Mountain Shifter Expanse Cosmos, you who are a foreigner to my world, remember this... Mountain Shifter is just the first style.

"Up to now since the date this Art was created, it only has this one style . If someone from the worlds beyond is destined to create the second style, he should come to my Expanse Cosmos - Mountain Shifter Expanse Cosmos, and leave behind the second style... because those in my world have never had any other desire but to inherit this Mountain Shifter Art besides this..."

At the instant the brand was left in Su Ming's soul, an ancient voice echoed in his heart. That voice felt like it had come from the passages of time and was full of sincerity.

Su Ming's heart trembled. He opened his eyes, and the shadow of mountains appeared clearly in his pupils. During that moment, he had a strong feeling that with just one thought... he could control all the mountains in the universe!

The world instantly crumbled. As the fog around him tumbled about and the mountain beneath him collapsed, a gigantic vortex appeared out of thin air above him. While it spun about with loud booming sounds, a powerful suction force swept up the people's bodies...

When Su Ming opened his eyes, he saw Xu Hui's body in the distance. She was already close to the vortex, and beside her was Xuan Shang. Xu Hui seemed to have seized him by the arm, but there was panic on his face, and fear filled him as he shook his head nonstop. In the end, his expression morphed into that of anguish.

Su Ming did not look closely at him. With one move, he took his first step forward, and when his foot landed, a glowing spot appeared.

Then Su Ming took his second step, and the second glowing spot appeared.

He leaped up and appeared right next to Xu Hui, who was above the two spots. A smile bloomed on her face. She let go of her grip over Xuan Shang's arm, which resulted in him being swept into the vortex, and allowed Su Ming to hold onto her. The third glowing spot then also appeared.

At the instant this happened, the spots connected and formed... a mountain!

That mountain might have been an illusion, but it allowed Su Ming to hold onto Xu Hui in midair, remaining tall and still with the vortex beneath him! It was as if a real mountain had appeared in the sky.

With one arm around Xu Hui, who was staring at him, Su Ming faintly spoke into the air. "Where is my serendipity?"

"There are plenty of worlds in the fifth kiln, but only this world... was created solely by me. Your serendipity is the essence of this one world I have gathered over countless years!" Old Ya Mu said from above, his voice echoing throughout the world that started rumbling furiously.

Shadows appeared beside Su Ming. There were dozens of them... and all of them had the appearances of the ferocious spirits. Nian Yin was one of them!

These ferocious spirits were the people Old Ya Mu had captured over the years. At that moment, all of them stood transfixed in the air. However, their bodies were withering rapidly, and a large amount of life force erupted from their bodies. This life force turned into thin white threads that charged towards Su Ming.

1. A mountain is formed of three dots: The original is actually supposed to be "A mountain is also three."

Because mountain is 山 (shan1) and 三 (san1) sound almost the same, but it made no sense in English if I wrote it like that, so I tweaked it again while trying to retain its original nuance. Still, please take note that this is a wordplay lost in translation.

2. Just a clarification, what he meant is that Mountain Shifter itself only has one style, and this Mountain Shifter Art, which only has one style, is the first style in his Ultimate Art, which has seven styles.

Chapter 1017 Unmoving, Rudimentary Heavens

Su Ming swept his gaze past the area and immediately saw that the three people he had absorbed with Ecang's true self were not among the ferocious spirits. The one with the tuft of white fur was also not among them. Clearly, those who were absorbed by Ecang and Possessed by Su Ming were in a state of having been truly wiped out. From then on, they were no longer a part of Old Ya Mu's game.

As the life force from the ferocious spirits in the area turned into thin threads and fused into Su Ming, his body let out a bang. His cultivation base increased exponentially, filling his entire body in an instant.

The life force from the dozens of ferocious spirits around him was the quintessence formed from their cultivation bases. At that moment, all of it gushed out and filled the world.

By then, all the other people in the world had been sucked into the vortex, and Su Ming had no idea in which dimension they had been transferred. At that moment, the only ones present were Su Ming and Xu Hui, who was in his arms.

In the face of the rampaging power from the cultivation bases spreading out from the ferocious spirits, Su Ming's expression changed.

"My power has already been restored. I can protect myself, so you don't have to bother about me..." Xu Hui said softly while smiling faintly.

When Su Ming turned his head around to look at her, he saw her wink at him. A sly look appeared in her eyes, and her appearance changed swiftly. Once her body distorted, she turned... into the appearance of the body formed by the supreme treasure!

"You found it rude to snatch this item, but I'm fine with it, so I got it for you," Xu Hui said with a smile and left Su Ming's arms. As she retreated, she faced the rampaging power from the place head-on.

Su Ming blinked. He remembered the anguished expression on Xuan Shang's face when he went to grab Xu Hui just then, but he had no idea what method she had used to threaten Xuan Shang into giving her that supreme treasure.

With the body of the supreme treasure around, Su Ming believed that Xu Hui would have the highest possible protection, so he stopped thinking about how she had obtained it. Instead, he sucked in a sharp breath of the vast life force coming towards him.

With it, Su Ming's body let out a bang as if he was about to explode. The rampaging life force and power from the cultivation bases spread out from the dozens of ferocious spirits from all directions and surged into Su Ming.

This scene was similar to transferring cultivation bases. Besides a few, the dozens of ferocious spirits... were all Almighty in Mastery Realm. Because of that, the transfer of their cultivation bases was a great serendipity that was unprecedented in the universe.

This serendipity could be gentle so that Su Ming would not have to suffer, but Old Ya Mu did not have the obligation to make this serendipity gentle. His thought process was simple.

'I've given you the serendipity, but as for how much you can absorb will depend entirely on you!'

"If you have the ability, then absorb all of it. If you can't sustain it and end up with your body bursting, then that will be due to your greed. It won't have anything to do with me," Old Ya Mu said flatly as he cast a cold glance at Su Ming absorbing that life force. A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes.

However, at that moment, he could not speak. The rampaging life force and the power from the cultivation bases forced him to only circulate them rapidly in his body as he absorbed them. Fortunately, Su Ming had some experience with this sort of thing from

the God Ascension Nectar, or else, if anyone else had been in his place, they would definitely panic.

This was a serendipity, but also a disaster!

However, Su Ming had the right to choose and give up on this disaster. If he did so, then the serendipity would stop. He could avoid endangering his life, but if he gave up on it so easily... he would not be Su Ming.

Sweat covered his body while booming sounds continuously spread out from it. A large amount of life force surged madly into him through all his pores. The pace at which Su Ming circulated his cultivation base could not catch up to that of the life force and power of those cultivation bases fusing into him.

It was at that moment that Su Ming threw his head back and roared. His cultivation base clone had broken through the later stage of World Plane Realm and attained great completion of World Plane Realm!

"Since this is a serendipity, then I might as well give you more."

Old Ya Mu cast Su Ming a glance, and a malicious smile appeared on his face. He lifted his right hand and swung his arm forward. Booming sounds immediately surged into the sky, and the dimension shattered.

As the dimension collapsed, space distorted, and the power of essence that had gathered over countless years erupted forth. It then immediately surged into Su Ming's body, causing it to instantly swell up.

"Absorb it. Remember this, when you can't absorb it anymore, don't blame me for not granting you that serendipity. When you can't sustain it anymore, search for a place to avoid the dimension's destruction. After that, you can step into the vortex that will form after the dimension fully collapses. That vortex will Relocate you to the core of the fifth kiln.

"Now, I have fulfilled my promise. Boy, it'll all depend on you for how much you can absorb." Old Ya Mu smiled faintly. He moved, and his appearance changed. His body turned into an illusion, then he swiftly gained corporeal form, and he transformed into Huang Mei.

He lowered his head to scrutinize his own body. His smile grew wider, and he turned around to take a step into the air. He then disappeared from the crumbling dimension.

"Su Ming!" Xu Hui was still in the rampaging dimension. She immediately cried out anxiously when she saw what was happening, but was continuously forced back by the rampaging power and could not get closer.

"It's fine, I can last!"

As Su Ming's body swelled up, he threw his head back and roared. Immediately, he expanded even more, and his cultivation base stirred up a storm.

The storm might have been instantly suppressed, but Su Ming's cultivation base had reached a breakthrough during that instant!

A moon appeared behind him!

It was a gray moon, and a boundless, strange and enchanting air spread out from it, along with a thick aura of death. In that crumbling dimension, the appearance of the moon caused the rampaging power to surge towards it.

Booming sounds reverberated in the air. It came from some of the dozens of ferocious spirits around Su Ming transferring their cultivation bases to him. When some of their bodies reached an extremely shriveled state, they exploded. Old Ya Mu's Art prevented these former cultivators from wasting even a single bit of their existence even after they had delivered all of their cultivation bases to him. At the time, they actually had to make their souls explode and turn into quintessence after they were reduced to ashes. If Su Ming could absorb it, then he should. If he could not, then he was not to blame Ya Mu for not giving him that serendipity.

'Your serendipity is right there. You can see it, but I'm going to make you unable to absorb it, since it'll be over your limit.'

This was a form of counterattack from Ya Mu to Su Xuan Yi. However, that counterattack was reflected on Su Ming.

'Without understanding them, cultivation bases that are forcefully gathered together are just empty.' Old Ya Mu, who had now taken Huang Mei's appearance, walked out of the distortions that manifested in the galaxy beyond the fifth kiln. He turned his head around to cast a glance at the fifth kiln, and a faint smile appeared on his lips.

In the collapsing dimension within the fifth kiln, Su Ming sensed great danger. Forget the turbulent source after the dimension crumbled, just the dozens of ferocious spirits around him already made it hard for Su Ming to continue absorbing them.

Even though he broke through great completion in World Plane Realm and stepped into Lunar Kalpa Realm, the moon that appeared for Su Ming... was a dead moon!

'The scattered life force and cultivation bases in this place and the essence from this dimension will allow my cultivation base to increase by leaps and bounds if I can absorb all of it... but it'll just be a simple increase in my cultivation base. Without an epiphany, everything will be insubstantial... In the end, I will have great strength, but I won't be

able to control it with my mind. I'll have power in me, but I won't be able to use it even a single bit.

'I have to absorb this serendipity exceptionally quickly, which prevents me from gaining an epiphany. This is that Old Ya Mu's goal.' A glint shone in Su Ming's eyes.

'But I'll... be taking this serendipity!' Su Ming's eyes fell shut the next moment, and an incredibly thick aura of death surrounded him!

Once this happened, waves of cold air spread out through the area from Su Ming, freezing the collapsing dimension. Snow began to fall and swirled in all directions, and not a single bit of warmth remained in Su Ming's body. He was cold, just like a dead person.

He opened his eyes at that moment, and his eyes were gray and dull.

Su Ming did not have the epiphany that would allow him to reach Lunar Kalpa Realm, but he had... the epiphany about his own life—the path of life that would allow him to walk from winter to spring, to move from death to regaining consciousness, from Yin Death to Bright Yang.

The gray moon meant that Su Ming had died. It symbolized the midwinter of his life!

As the aura of death erupted from Su Ming's body, a cloudy film appeared on the gray moon behind him. A large amount of life force, the essence of the dimension, and the rampaging cultivation bases surged into Su Ming's body before flowing out of it to turn into the power to form the moon of Lunar Kalpa Realm.

Su Ming stood with his long hair dancing in the air and was filled with an incredibly cold air. As he stood in midair, his body swiftly returned to normal from its swollen state. The gray moon behind him shone with the light of death.

At the same time, a fierce light flashed in Su Ming's eyes. He brought his right hand up and struck the center of his brows. With a bang, overlapping shadows appeared on his body. That was... the clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole moving out and standing to Su Ming's right.

At the instant that clone appeared, the life force and rampaging power split up and surged into the clone, causing him to immediately collapse with a bang. But while he collapsed, the blood and flesh that spread out from him tumbled backwards swiftly, as if they were being regrouped. As they were forced apart, they gathered together again and again, and each time they were forced apart before they subsequently gathered together, the body would become stronger and tougher.

Gradually, as the clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole continued regrouping and reforming, a moon appeared behind him!

That moon's color was red. It was a shade of red that was akin to blood, and a strange, enchanting color that was similar to that of autumn leaves!

The gray moon symbolized death and midwinter, while the red moon symbolized the autumn red that marked his struggles in death and his desire to dye the sky in blood!

During that moment, with a bang, Su Ming's Echang clone appeared above his cultivation base clone and his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole. His three clones formed three spots at that instant, and they formed the mark of a mountain!

It was a towering mountain. The unmoving, rudimentary heavens!

Bang!

The dimension shuddered violently, and Old Ya Mu's footsteps came to an abrupt halt while he was walking through the galaxy beyond the fifth kiln with a composed expression. When he swiftly turned his head around, his expression changed.

Chapter 1018 The First Time He Opened His Eyes!

Mountains had three spots.

In the crumbling dimension, Su Ming's cultivation base clone was the first spot. The gray moon where the spot was symbolized death and midwinter.

Su Ming's clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole was the second spot. The crimson moon exuded a presence in which life force and the aura of death intersected with each other, resulting in a bright red, the shade of autumn. This was the meaning of autumn Su Ming had come to understand in his life.

Above his cultivation base clone and his clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole was the Echang clone. He was the third spot of the mountain mark. Once the clone materialized, a moon immediately appeared behind him.

It was... a piercing yellow!

Its light was like the color of the moon itself, but behind the clone, it symbolized endless fire and heat. They were the flames of summer, a type of arrogance that was filled with an abundance of life.

Three clones. Three moons. At that moment, as the mark of the mountain, they turned into a sight that did not move in any direction. As the rampaging power of cultivation

bases swept past, the sound of the dimension shattering echoed in the air. It sounded as if the universe was being destroyed, and it would last for eternity.

The dozens of ferocious spirits were swiftly withering away. A large amount of life force surged into Su Ming, and it was immediately devoured by the mark of the mountain formed by the three clones, then rapidly spread out to be dissolved by the three moons.

Gradually, the aura of death from the gray moon became thicker. The gray light spreading out symbolized the shadow of death, and it even caused Su Ming's cultivation base clone to exude a grayish green air. It was as if he was a corpse that had crawled out of hell itself!

The cultivation clone's gaze was chilling, heartless, and aloof. It was powerful enough to make all the people who were familiar with Su Ming find him an unfamiliar sight. That appearance made him seem as if he was a god that had control over the netherworld.

Su Ming's clone that practiced the Art of Swallowing Hollow Shadows Whole was a powerful physical body that only cultivated the body and did not practice any divine abilities. At that moment, as the life force and cultivation bases surged into him, he continued becoming increasingly more powerful. As his body shattered and reformed, it became stronger. Each piece of his bone as well as every inch of his flesh and every drop of blood were becoming more powerful at a maddening pace, as if he was being refined repeatedly for thousands upon thousands of times.

The moon behind him was crimson, just like the blood that stained his hands his whole life. The smile at the corners of his lips gave off a terrifying feeling. The body that was dyed red by the moonlight... gave others the impression that they were looking at a crazed Immortal fighting against the heavens while he was in a state between life and death!

Above these two clones was the Echang clone, and he looked as if he was lifting up the god of hell and the crazed Immortal fighting against the heavens. At that moment, the Echang clone was no longer fully human. There were countless twisting branches spreading out from his body, and when they spun around the area, they made it seem as if the Echang clone had turned into a tree.

As he threw his head back and let out a soundless roar, the branches immediately surrounded him. The yellow moon behind him immediately erupted with an indescribably vast life force!

That life force was the searing heat of summer. It came from Echang's life, and only Echang, a powerful life form that could be written into Old Man Extermination's ballad, was worthy of Su Ming's state of summer. Only it could sustain the vast amount of life force existing in the moon that symbolized summer!

The presence from the three great clones allowed Su Ming to devour and absorb the rampaging streams of cultivation bases around him. With three moons, he formed the mark of the mountain, and this was...

"Three Mountains Illuminating the Moon, and I created it on my own!" Su Ming's three great clones shouted at the same time. As the three moons rapidly absorbed the life force and cultivation bases, unending booms rang out from the bodies of the dozens of ferocious spirits around Su Ming.

Those booms came from the ferocious spirits self-destructing after they had delivered all their life force and cultivation bases. About a dozen breaths later, only four out of the dozens of ferocious spirits were left in the area!

They were trembling, having already been reduced to only skin and bones. Their expressions were still blank and vacant while they delivered their souls to Su Ming.

But they lasted for only several more before exploding with a bang. When all of the ferocious spirits self-destructed, a large amount of power swept through the area with an even more violent presence. It rushed swiftly to Su Ming, as if wanting to make him burst. There was a domineering will within it, one that screamed that no matter what, he had to absorb it, whether was willing or not.

A loud bang rang out in Su Ming's mind, and the mark of the mountain formed by the three great clones shook furiously under the impact. Soon after, the power that was formed by the ferocious spirits self-destructing forced its way into Su Ming's three clones to nourish the moons behind them.

However, this forceful entry was no longer a form of nourishment. It pushed the moons to swell up.

'I still lack a clone!' A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

'What I need is my real physical body, the one that belongs to me as an Abyss Builder. That is my real body, and it will bear the burden... of walking from death to life, from winter to spring... He will bear the burden of walking down the path for the resurrection of all living things!'

A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. He had never longed for his real body to appear as badly as he did during that moment. He yearned to fuse with it and complete the final step of his state of life!

From death to life!

From a state where he had his eyes shut to him opening his eyes!

That desire spread out from Su Ming's three great clones and formed a calling that could penetrate the dimension and move through space. That call shot through the fifth kiln, Divine Essence Star Ocean, the area where the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds were stationed... and sent straight to True Morning Dao World!

Within it was a gigantic Rune formed by countless fragmented continents. At its core was a corpse that lay unmoving on an altar for ages. During that moment... it started shivering furiously.

Those shivers made it seem as if the person was about to wake up. As he shivered, brilliant light shone swiftly from the altar beneath the corpse. Once that light appeared, it spread out and instantly covered all the fragmented continents in the area. At the same time, booming sounds echoed in space. The gigantic Rune in the galaxy was activated and began operating.

As the Rune came into operation, a powerful, mighty pressure descended and suppressed the corpse on the altar, causing it to be unable to stand up or open its eyes no matter how much it shivered!

In the meantime, booming sounds echoed in all directions. When the powerful and mighty pressure descended, it caused many people in True Morning Dao World to instantly notice it.

Beyond the Rune were two rotating planets. Sitting cross-legged on one of them was a woman in white. She had an incredibly beautiful face, but her expression was cold. She frowned and stared at the Rune in the distance. While she watched it sparkle, she sensed the suppression descending from its self-activation.

"Someone is summoning him..." the woman said softly.

On another planet was a person in black robes. He was standing at the peak of the mountain and staring at the gigantic Rune in the galaxy. A hood covered his face, so his expression could not be seen, but based on his posture, a vague grimace could be sensed about him.

"The child has grown up, and he has learned how to summon... but the time for the corpse to be used is nigh. How can I let you take it away just like this?" a hoarse voice slowly said from within the black hood. There was an ancientness to the speaker.

However, at the instant the voice reverberated in the air, the gigantic Rune formed by countless fragmented continents let out a violent rumble that shook the sky and earth. It seemed like the whole galaxy trembled from it. At the same time, eight of the numerous fragmented continents that formed the Rune shattered into pieces.

Booming sounds reverberated in the galaxy. The corpse with its eyes shut at the center of the Rune began trembling even harder, and his body slowly started showing signs of rising up in the air!

This scene caused the woman in white's expression to change. The man in black let out a cold harrumph and swung his arm. Immediately, thousands of long arcs rose into space from the two planets.

Those thousands of long arcs were thousands of cultivators. They appeared around the gigantic Rune and simultaneously sat down with their knees crossed as if they were suppressing it. In the mid of the booming sounds, the corpse that seemed as if it was about to rise up sank down and was once again pushed down heavily on the altar.

However, during that moment, a roar that seemed to have come out from thin air echoed in the hearts of all cultivators who were in the area. Within that roar was madness, along with determination and a force struggling against the world. It was a roar calling out to the real physical body—Su Ming's roar from within the fifth kiln in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

Along with that roar, loud booming sounds rose into space. As a large number of fragmented continents in the Rune shattered, the thousands of cultivators shuddered together, and at the instant all of them coughed out blood, the corpse at the center of the Rune swiftly began levitating again.

At that moment, the man in black moved without any hesitation and disappeared in an instant. The next moment, he appeared on the altar at the core of the Rune and lowered his head to glance at the corpse before bringing his right hand up and pushing it down on it.

That one push caused the galaxy to tremble. The corpse was slammed fiercely back on the altar. At that moment, it was as if the momentum of the entire galaxy was gathered on the black-robed man's right hand. It was as if he was borrowing the power of the entire True Morning Dao World to suppress that corpse!

However, the instant the black-robed man borrowed the power of True Morning Dao World to suppress the corpse, the power dissipated for an instant from his hands. It was as if True Morning Dao World was extracting the power from the black-robed man's hands.

"The kismet is not allowing me to do this?"

The man in black lifted his head to look at the space above him, and the corpse on the altar rose into the air again. The shadows of three moons also appeared beside it. Two were at his feet, and one was above his head. They formed the shape of a mountain. When the shadows of the moons took shape, numerous distortions appeared around the corpse, as if it was about to move through space and disappear.

The man in black let out a cold harrumph and lifted his right hand again. His fingernails instantly grew longer, and with one flick of his wrist, they broke off from his fingers and turned as sharp as needles. They sliced through space and stirred up sharp whistles before piercing the corpse's body.

With a bang, the distortions around the corpse instantly collapsed and disappeared. However, at the instant the five fingernails pierced the skin... the corpse opened its eyes!

This was the first time the corpse had opened its eyes. It was the first time anyone saw them not closed!

At the instant it happened, a low voice that contained countless years suppressed within it came from the corpse's mouth and shook the universe!

"Di Tian!"

Chapter 1019 The Three Mountains Illuminate the Moon!

"Di Tian!" The roar emitted by Su Ming's three great clones at the same time echoed through the crumbling dimension within the fifth kiln.

Just then, Su Ming had had a powerful feeling that he was summoning his real body. He even had the feeling that he was already in his physical body and could have it move through space to arrive in this dimension.

However, he was stopped again and again. During that process, Su Ming used the rampaging power around him to forcefully take away his real body, but during the critical moment, he was stopped again.

But it had allowed Su Ming to gather all his power of Lunar Kalpa Realm as well as the Three Mountains Illuminating the Moon to break all barriers and open his eyes!

His real physical body's eyes!

It might have only lasted for an instant, but it had allowed him to see a person in black robes, and the face underneath that black hood. It was... Di Tian!

"One of these days, I will snatch my real body back!" Su Ming threw his head back and roared. There might no longer be a single ferocious spirit around him, but the destruction of the dimension had reached its peak.

During that instant, the collapsing dimension was letting out deafening booms. They made it seem like the world had exploded on its own. The entire dimension completely burst apart.

As it happened, the rampaging power swept through the area and surged madly towards Su Ming. It was as if his existence was the black hole in the exploding dimension.

The eyes of all Su Ming's three clones shrank. At the instant the rampaging power surged over, they formed a seal with their hands at the same time. With a bang, a powerful light burst forth from the moons behind the three clones.

The light was formed by shades of gray, red, and yellow. At the instant it overlapped with Su Ming, he let out a low growl.

"Three Mountains Illuminate the Moon!"

The moons behind his three clones grew larger during that moment and overlapped with each other at the spot in the middle.

The three moons then turned into one. It was so big that the moment it appeared and the rampaging power in the dimension crumbling around him swept over, it absorbed and devoured it.

Booming sounds echoed in the air, causing Su Ming's moon to become larger, until it reached the height of several hundreds of feet. That moon was something that no other cultivators had ever obtained before. In fact, there was never a time that such a large moon was formed by anyone when they reached Lunar Kalpa Realm in the universe.

That was because Su Ming's moon was formed by all the cultivation bases from dozens of Almightyies. It was formed with the essence of a dimension gathered over countless years. It was the moon formed when Su Ming walked from death to life and from midwinter to spring.

Rumbling sounds reverberated in the air, and the dimension shattered. Su Ming did not waste even a single bit of his serendipity. He absorbed all of it and formed... the most powerful moon in Lunar Kalpa Realm that no one before him had ever formed, and no one after him would ever form either!

Even those in Solar Kalpa Realm would be incredibly weak before his moon. This was... the one moon in Lunar Kalpa Realm that filled the world... one that could threaten Almightyies who were Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death!

At the instant that moon was formed, Su Ming's three great clones gathered and fused together, instantly turning into a one person. The moon was behind him, filling Su Ming with a monstrous, malicious air!

After all, no one possessed such a large moon in Lunar Kalpa Realm. The moon shone in three colors, and they overlapped continuously. When the gray light appeared on Su Ming, he was the incarnation of the netherworld under the universe. He symbolized death and destruction!

When red light appeared on his body, he was not the only thing that was dyed entirely in red. His heart and soul were also colored that way. During that moment, Su Ming was the crazed Immortal who knew all forms of slaughter. That red was the desire for blood, which was the resolution Su Ming had made in the past - his determination to dye the sky red!

When the yellow light appeared on Su Ming's body, it meant that he no longer symbolized death or the red shade of autumn. He was no longer destruction and slaughter, but was a life force at its most supreme state. He was the type of life force that was merciful to all forms of life in the world and would nourish them. He was the eternal existence within the scorching summer where all those who followed him could obtain eternal life.

Three different lives, three different presences, and three different feelings fused together... giving Su Ming a malicious air that surged into the heavens!

The word 'wicked' could no longer be used to describe the bizarre air about him. However, one thing was certain - from then on, Su Ming was an existence that had never appeared before in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos!

When he opened his eyes, the world before him gone. He also saw the body of the supreme treasure tumbling backwards in the turbulence stirred up once the dimension was destroyed and reduced to nothingness.

Su Ming turned his head around. During that moment, the presence of death spread out from his whole body. He was dressed in a long gray robe, had long gray hair, gray pupils, and he was... the heartless and aloof persona of death.

He took a step forward, and even with the impact of the dimension's destruction, there seemed to be no form of power that dared to stop his actions. With one step, he appeared beside the body of the supreme treasure, then lifted his right hand to catch its arm.

Xu Hui's heart shuddered. Even her breathing had stopped for a moment when she saw Su Ming's gaze and those gray pupils. A powerful sense of unfamiliarity rose in her, causing her to almost be unable to recognize the person in front of her as Su Ming.

With the arm of the body formed by the supreme treasure in his hand, the gray Su Ming lifted his head. With an aloof gaze, he moved towards the void that was formed after the dimension collapsed.

With a loud bang that sliced through space and shocked the heavens, Su Ming brought Xu Hui into the void. With a flash, they disappeared from the destroyed dimension.

At the instant they left, Su Ming turned his head around and cast a glance at the countless fragments left after the dimension beneath him had been destroyed. With a heartless gaze, he cast a glance at one of the fragments.

It was during that moment that the expression of Old Ya Mu in the galaxy beyond the fifth kiln turned incredibly dark. He had been able to sense everything that happened to Su Ming in his dimension because he had left a Brand there before he left.

He did not expect that Su Ming would be able to sense the Brand's existence. The strangeness of Su Ming was something he had expected less, and even his heart trembled from that.

"From death to life, from midwinter to spring, what a path... What a man you are, Su Ming," Old Ya Mu mumbled after a while.

"Three Mountains Illuminate the Moon... the three great clones each turn into a mark of a mountain and reflect a moon at the same time. This moon... is something that has never appeared before, and it is so strong that it can shock even an average Almighty in Mastery Realm!

"He could have used the serendipity to reach Lunar Kalpa Realm and then head to Mastery Realm... but he did not, and that shows that he is aiming for something incredibly big!

"I can tell that he is aiming for his real physical body, because if he isn't complete, then even if he reached Mastery Realm, he would... be far from the person he created right now!

"If he fuses with his real physical body someday, then he will become complete, and then based on his epiphany, he will be able to move from death to life... which is the Life Realm!

"This is what you are plotting for. You created a cultivation method, a divine ability that would allow you to step straight into Life Realm within the four great Realms for Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death!

"This divine ability is powerful enough to stand toe-to-toe with the Mountain Shifter Art and the Nine Heavenly Abyss Sword Styles!

"What a man you are, Su Ming." Old Ya Mu stared at the galaxy behind him and mumbled under his breath. A hint of respect appeared in his eyes.

"In the near future, another Almighty in Life Realm will... appear in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos!" Ya Mu let out a sigh filled with emotion, then turned his head around to walk into the distance.

"Su Xuan Yi... with a son like this, even if you are suffering greatly now, you should be relieved and happy."

Old Ya Mu's figure gradually disappeared into the distance. Then, he vanished without a trace from the galaxy.

Within the fifth kiln, Su Ming was in the void with Xu Hui. There, they seemed to go through countless years. Vaguely, Su Ming saw Reverend Zi Long. He was fighting against some ferocious beasts in a dimension within the void.

He also saw that Xuan Shang, Yun You, and Hua Yu having split up. He saw Yun You scream in pain when a Fire Spirit burned his body and devoured his Nascent Divinity.

He also saw Hua Yu, who was skilled in sealing souls, carefully moving forward through a swamp, completely unaware of a dozen pairs of green eyes staring at his back coldly.

Su Ming saw Flame Fiends' Progenitor as well. He had a battle axe in his hand and was laughing loudly at the sky, unwilling to part with that axe because he was too fond of it.

Progenitor Long Hai was quietly following Xuan Shang. There was a cold sneer at the corners of his lips. He had been following Xuan Shang for a long time without the latter noticing him.

There was also... Zhu You Cai.

Su Ming saw him sitting on a mountain. While looking at the bright moon, tears trickled down his cheeks. In his hand was a medicinal core. His tears fell and landed on the ground. When they broke off into even smaller droplets, Zhu You Cai's murmured to himself.

"I will definitely find the fifth stone, head to the Fifth True World, and find Abyss Builders. No matter what price I have to pay... I will resurrect you!"

Su Ming saw all of this when he moved through the void. He could ignore everyone else, but when it came to Zhu You Cai, he remembered the Life Inequity Spear as well as how the other had acted to save him when they were in the mountain. Those were acts of kindness.

And acts of kindness had to be repaid.

When Su Ming remembered Zhu You Cai's words, his hair no longer remained gray, but turned yellow. His pupils also gained a yellow shade, and the presence spreading out

from him was a vast, indescribable life force. There was also a warmth in him that would cause a person to instinctively want to get closer to him.

At that moment, even if he was not smiling, in all people's eyes, there would be a faint smile on his lips. The warmth in it was a charm that would cause everyone to give up on everything and choose to follow him. It was... the light of God that would intoxicate people and make them want to worship it.

Su Ming had no idea how much time had passed. When he reached the end of the void, a hazy layer of fog appeared in front of him. He could tell that there was a border formed by several Spirit Trudging Platforms there.

This was the deepest part of the fifth kiln, and the place where the first border was located. Once he moved past this place, he would step into the real core of the fifth kiln!

Over there... the fifth stone would appear!

Chapter 1020 The Bald Crane's Past Vulgar Tastes...

Su Ming reached the first border while moving through the void. The Spirit Trudging Platforms there were not completely empty at that moment. There were a few Fire Spirits lying sprawled on them. The color of those Fire Spirits was rather dull, but the presence spreading out from their bodies was incredibly powerful.

Almost the instant Su Ming rushed out of the fog and stepped on the Spirit Trudging Platforms, the Fire Spirits turned towards him with fierceness in their eyes.

However, that fierceness disappeared right away and turned into confusion that revealed itself in screeching. Not a single hint of malicious intent could be heard in their voices. Instead, there was a feeling of closeness and intimacy.

Su Ming smiled. With his golden hair and golden eyes, he stepped onto a Spirit Trudging Platform with Xu Hui, who was pale, in his arms. The strength of the Fire Spirits gave her goosebumps.

Su Ming's arrival caused the Fire Spirits to immediately scatter from the place. When he stepped on the Spirit Trudging Platform, they sized him up with curiosity before surprised delight appeared in their eyes. Then, they ran to him one after another, as if the golden light spreading out from his body could make them extremely comfortable.

Su Ming lifted his head. He did not bother with the Fire Spirits, but stared into the distance. There was the real core of the fifth kiln. As he watched it, he lifted his foot, intending to move forward, but then he came to an abrupt halt.

"Darn it all..." A certain catch phrase from a certain bald crane who had just woken up echoed in Su Ming's mind.

"Hey? What's this light? What is this light?!" the bald crane immediately screamed, and a smile appeared at the corners of Su Ming's lips. He lowered his head to look at his storage bag. It shone before his eyes, and the bald crane flew out on its own. When it saw Su Ming, it widened its eyes.

"If you're awake, then follow me on your own," Su Ming said faintly and did not linger anymore in that place. He took a step forward and left into the distance to walk straight into the space leading to the core of the fifth kiln.

The bald crane widened its eyes behind Su Ming. As it stared at the golden light around him, it was astonished and puzzled. Suddenly, roars came from behind it. When it turned its head back, it immediately saw the Fire Spirits adopting hostile expressions, looking as if they were about to pounce over.

The bald crane shuddered, and with a loud screech, it transformed into golden bald crane with golden light spreading out from its body, but its light did not have any effect on Fire Spirits' hostility. Instead, as it pierced their eyes, they roared furiously and rushed forward.

"Unfair!" With a shrill screech, the bald crane fled, flapping its wings desperately to catch up to Su Ming. With much difficulty, it avoided being caught by the Fire Spirits, and as it escaped, its heart filled with indignation.

"Darn it all, I just woke up! Just woke up, you know? Why did I run into something like this? And why isn't that golden light I made effective?"

"Something's not right. The color is the same, so could it be that there is something different fundamentally?" While feeling indignant, the bald crane continuously changed the light on its body. One moment it was golden yellow, then yellowish brown, and in the next, it had the shade of wax...

But when the bald crane caught up to Su Ming and looked at him again, its body froze for a moment before it widened its eyes. They went blank, because at that moment, the color around Su Ming's body was no longer golden yellow, but crimson red!

Long red hair, red eyes, a long red robe, and a vast murderous aura as well as madness spreading from his entire body formed a killing intent that surged into the sky and filled the area. Even the void around them trembled nonstop because of that killing intent.

After a long while, Su Ming's expression gradually changed. This time, he was no longer gray, nor gold or red. Instead, he returned to how he usually looked. With a frown on his face, he moved forward in the void, his expression slightly dark.

'I need to fuse with my real body as soon as possible, or else my clones will be slightly unstable... I couldn't control the changes previously. At the slightest stimulation, I would change.' A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes while he was in the void. He had noticed what was wrong with him, since it was like his whole personality changed at a moment's notice.

That change was not something he could control on his own. As three personalities, three clones, and the Three Mountains Illuminating the Moon fused together, they might seem stable, but in truth, a crucial part was missing... his real self.

'Before I absorbed the serendipity and had the Three Mountains Illuminating the Moon fuse together, I didn't have those fluctuating emotions. But why did this happen once I had the three mountains illuminate the moon and turned them into the gigantic moon for my Lunar Kalpa Realm?' Su Ming frowned while charging forward through the void.

'I remember the Duke of Crimson Flame once mentioning that Abyss Builders have an incredibly mysterious divine ability which allows them to have all of their clones fuse together with a unique method so that they can reach an incredibly terrifying state of power.

'I didn't quite understand what he meant previously and thought that the previous method I used was the way, but by the looks of it now... Could it be that the method of fusion I used only now is that mysterious fusion that belongs to Abyss Builders?' Su Ming wondered.

However, the instant that thought formed in his head, a sense of danger rose in him. Fog tumbled about swiftly in the void beneath him, and shrill roars were coming from over there.

"Give me back my life..." Within the roars there were drifting words that echoed in space. They were indistinct, but were piercing and shrill to the ears!

"Keep me company..."

"Give me back my life..."

The voice rose and fell as if there were numerous people talking at the same time. They said different words, and as they echoed in the air, a powerful wave of resentment spread through the void.

Then, Su Ming saw shadows appearing out of nowhere in the void beneath him. They turned into strange life forms that resembled ghosts, and he could clearly see that there was madness and great resentment on their faces. Once they saw Su Ming, dark light shone in their eyes and they charged towards him silently.

Almost the instant he saw the ghosts, a gray tint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. His hair also turned gray, and a thick aura of death swiftly erupted from his body without reservation.

At that moment, Su Ming was cold and heartless. Not a single hint of emotion could be detected in his eyes; he was like a dead man!

And in the world of the dead... there were no living creatures. All those who lived were the enemies!

The instant Su Ming turned gray, he let go of Xu Hui's hand. Her heart trembled, and she moved back. At that moment, Su Ming was so unfamiliar to her that it was as if she had never gotten to know him. That aura of death coming from his body made her think of death.

The aura was so thick that it filled the entire void in the blink of an eye. The powerful resentful immediately dissipated, as if it was a presence that simply did not belong on the same level.

'He... He...'

The bald crane came to an abrupt halt and widened its eyes in disbelief. When it stared at Su Ming, even though it did not have any feathers on its body, it still as if they were standing up from goosebumps all over its skin.

"Darn it all, what's going on?!" The bald crane was stuttering slightly. It moved back swiftly, feeling as if it had seen a fierce ghost.

"Such a thick aura of death... Could it be that he climbed out of hell? Damn it, how could this be? This... This is..." The bald crane shuddered, but an excited glint gradually appeared in its eyes.

"Haha! The stronger Su Ming is, the more I can bully others in the future and snatch their crystals as much as I want to! Bald crane, o bald crane, you are too great, how could you follow a monster like this? You are the person I admire the most, there is no other person I admire more!"

While the bald crane was filled with excitement, the gray-eyed Su Ming was so cold it was as if he was a block of freezing ice. He lowered his head and cast a faint glance at the void beneath him, where the ghosts who originally wanted to rush out had all now come to a halt in shock once the aura of death had spread out.

"All of you should not be alive, even if you are existing in this sort of state." When Su Ming said those words coldly, he lifted his right hand and seized space. Cracking sounds instantly rang out, and the Life Inequity Spear took shape. Su Ming caught it in

his hand. Since he'd changed, besides the coldness on his face, there had not been a single hint of any other emotion on him.

In fact, Su Ming's mind was very rational at that moment, and once it reached a certain point, it would turn... into callousness!

That rationality could allow him to use whatever method and means to destroy the existences he wanted dead.

It could be said that this particular state of his and the red madness were two complete opposites from each other.

While speaking, Su Ming had already taken a step forward. He was so quick that he instantly closed in on the ghosts. They screamed shrilly in pain, and gray light shone in Su Ming's eyes. Immediately, cracking sounds rose into the air. The aura of death from Su Ming's body turned extremely cold and spread out rapidly through the air to cover the entire area, causing the ghosts to freeze for a moment. During that instant, Su Ming threw the long spear in his hand forward.

With it, the void roared. A gigantic moon appeared clearly behind Su Ming. The color of that moon was gray. When it appeared, the screams from the ghosts became even more shrill and forlorn. Their aura immediately spread out from their bodies, as if they were about to be wiped off. They wanted to retreat, but when Su Ming threw the Life Inequity Spear, a vortex was formed at the tip of the spear. That vortex stirred up the entire area, causing all the ghosts who wanted to retreat to be unable to move. They could only fade away while screaming in pain under the aura of death from the moon.

However, there were some ghosts that escaped from the pull of the vortex. But just as they were about to change their forms and escape, Su Ming struck his storage bag with his left hand, and a gourd appeared. There were no longer just seven eyes on the gourd, but eight of them. Su Ming recited the incantation, and once a glint shone in all eight of the eyes, two small humans flew out and went after the ghosts who intended to flee.

The bald crane saw this, and its pupils swiftly constricted. It stared at the small female, and a perplexed expression appeared on its face.

'Hmm? Well, darn it all. Why does that small human look so familiar? Why does it feel like one of the female gourds I created to take revenge on Lu Ya after I was chased down by that old bastard? It really feels like one of the gourds I created to disgust him and seduce that small human from his gourd...'

The bald crane scratched its head in bemusement, filled with surprise.

Chapter 1021 Cloud

Su Ming's rationality reached its peak. His calmness had already become mercilessness. When he attacked, others would die. In fact, endless aura of death was spreading out of his entire body. It was as if he had taken over the right from hell of administering death to others.

This was the gray Su Ming.

When Life Inequity Spear was thrown forward, the vortex that was formed in the void looked as if it was the road heading to hell. When it was activated, it caused the ghosts that were fleeing in a state of being half-alive to scream shrilly. Their bodies were sucked into the vortex, and they were about... to enter the cycle of reincarnation because of the gigantic gray moon behind Su Ming!

As for the ghosts running away, the two small humans from the gourd charged forward and reduced all of them to ashes as booming sounds rose into the air. They disappeared into the void and vanished without a trace.

Everything had just begun when it already ended.

Su Ming, with his long gray hair, flung the Life Inequity Spear in his hand. Once it turned into a ring, he lifted the gourd, and the two small humans immediately tumbled backwards and went back after they turned into long arcs. They disappeared into the gourd.

There were no longer any ghosts roaring in the area. Everything had returned to silence.

Xu Hui stared at Su Ming blankly. A cold chill crept up from the bottom of her heart. The callous air about Su Ming was incredibly clear. It was an air that said that he cared nothing for all that lived. There was only pure rationality in him, heartlessness when all emotions were cast aside.

The destructive power from the gray moon had spread in a scattered fashion. If Xu Hui had... not noticed it beforehand and charged backwards, then there was a high possibility that she would have been affected by the destructive power.

This was still nothing, though. When Xu Hui looked towards Su Ming, she saw the gray pupils in his eyes, and she could not help but tremble.

She bit down on the bottom of her lip and said softly, "Su Ming..."

However, her voice did not elicit an answer from him. Su Ming only cast Xu Hui a faint look, the merciless look in his eyes as cold as ice. Without another glance, he turned his head around and took a step towards the void in front of him.

Xu Hui's face was slightly pale. In silence, she controlled the body of the supreme treasure to go after Su Ming. The bald crane had already registered what was going on at that moment, and as it mumbled under its breath about the gourd it created in the past, it swept its gaze towards Xu Hui.

"Hey, Big Sister Xu, don't mind him. It's fine. Everything's fine." The bald crane flew to Xu Hui's side and let out a few fake coughs before starting to comfort her, but the title he used to address Xu Hui did not sound quite right.

"I know that Little Boy Su. I'm telling you, based on my analysis, based on what my partner told me, I think, you know, that he kind of went a little off his rocker..." While the bald crane followed Xu Hui, it gestured with its claws as it spoke.

"In the words of my homeland, his emotions are now split into several parts, and he can't control them on his own either. First of all, he's someone that gets angry easily. Once he's mad, gray will immediately appear.

"Next, he's afraid of stimulation. Once he's stimulated, red will instantly appear. I'm just not entirely sure what sort of situation will cause that gold color to appear." The bald crane scratched its head and had a pensive look on its face as it scrutinized Su Ming, who was ahead of them.

Su Ming's expression was cold. While he walked in the void, he allowed the power of time to surround him. He walked past the dimensions that allowed him to step inside, but he did not go into them. Instead, he charged towards the core of the fifth kiln.

Time trickled by. Su Ming had no idea how much time had passed, but as he charged forward, he drew closer to the core of the fifth kiln.

At that moment, a voice from the distance echoed airily through the entire fifth kiln.

"Su..." That voice was powerful in a manner that it had never been before, and it was so strong that once Su Ming heard it, his body shuddered violently. He could tell... that this was a woman's voice!

When the bald crane heard that voice, its body also shuddered. Based on the look in its eyes, it seemed to be struggling. By its side, Xu Hui's expression changed. She knew the bald crane's peculiarities when it heard the voice previously, so she raised her right hand and flung it at the bald crane without any hesitation.

It turned into a long arc that charged towards Xu Hui and fused into the body of the supreme treasure. Only then did the struggle on its face become much fainter.

"Su..." The woman's voice spoke again. This time, there was an urgent tone to it. In fact, Su Ming did not know whether this was a figment of his imagination, but he heard a quiver in the voice.

A loud bang rang out in his head. He was unfamiliar with that voice, but there was something weirdly familiar about it. It was as if... there had been a point of time when his past self had heard that voice countless times.

Su Ming's long hair changed swiftly from gray to its original color. The aloof air about his body disappeared, and the original Su Ming returned once more.

His body trembled while he stared at the void from which the voice came.

"She is..." Xu Hui saw Su Ming return to his past self and approached him quietly. She stopped by his side.

Su Ming shook his head.

"I frightened you just now. That wasn't my intention. Once I fused the moons in my Lunar Kalpa Realm, some problems arose in my personality," Su Ming mumbled. He took a step forward and charged towards the place from which the voice came.

At that moment, Su Ming no longer had any sort of composure or rationality to him. There was only a resolve in his heart and an urge brought by a guess that caused his heart to pound in anxiety.

Xu Hui followed Su Ming quietly, moving beside him.

Time passed breath by breath, and Su Ming became increasingly faster. The woman's voice echoed in his ears time and again. After an unknown amount of time passed, he saw a gigantic altar floating in the void before himself. When his eyes landed on it, endless booms rang out in his head.

He saw a coffin lying on the altar!

It was a transparent coffin, and there was woman within it...

At the instant Su Ming saw the woman, he felt as if there were millions of thunderbolts rumbling in his head at the same time. His body trembled. Confusion as well as a myriad of other emotions appeared in his eyes.

This was the core of the fifth kiln, and the altar was the center of the core. The coffin on the altar lay there all year long in the void, using the space in the fifth kiln to absorb the life force from all those who came. All that life force... was then delivered to the woman's body lying inside.

This was a Rune with the fifth kiln serving as its main point. The goal of the Rune was to continuously deliver life force to the woman so that her own could be preserved and not vanish!

As Su Ming stared at the woman in the coffin, tears fell from his eyes without his notice. There was no way that he would not know this woman. She was the mother who appeared in his memories when he was in Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands, holding onto the baby in her arms and using her body to protect him even after she had died.

She was Su Ming's... mother!

He trembled. With tears trickling down his cheeks, he walked one step after another towards the coffin.

"Su..." The woman's voice appeared again. This time, it was so clear that it seemed as if it was right beside Su Ming's ears, causing more tears to flow down his face, and the booming sounds in his mind became even stronger.

"Su... My dear Ming Er..." The gentleness in the voice brought with it a warmth with which Su Ming was unfamiliar. It was a warmth born from a mother's longing for her own flesh and blood, as well as a care and devotion for her son.

"Don't be afraid. With your mother around, you'll be fine..."

"I promise you that I will always protect you until your father and I grow old and until the both of us no longer have the strength to stay with you and watch you complete the journey of your life..."

"Yun Er, you must be strong... Your ancestor was the one who gave you your name. He is filled with hopes for you..."

"No matter what, you must remember that you are an Abyss Builder. You are a proud Abyss Builder... Your father is a highly praised powerful warrior that might be able to surpass your ancestor, and I... came from Dark Dawn..."

The last few sentences did not echo in the void, but instead echoed in Su Ming's soul. The words weren't spoken right then, but came from the past. They were from a scene that Su Ming had long forgotten!

He felt his head being torn. A loud bang rang out, and he remembered all that had happened. He remembered that at the time, he had been swathed in darkness. He was very cold, and his fragile life could not stand against that cold. However, there was a voice that continued motivating him by speaking to him every single time he wanted to give up on life.

At that moment, he understood what had happened. At that time, he was still an infant in his mother's womb, a baby that nearly died due to the curse placed on him after the Abyss Builders were massacred.

Su Ming saw a fuzzy scene in his head. In it, a woman was lying in the coffin. She stroked the bump on her belly with a kind smile on her face. Tears that he could not see flowed down her cheeks as she mumbled softly to the baby in her womb.

By her side was a silent middle-aged man. He watched the scene quietly and clenched his fists tightly. His heart was filled with madness and grief, but there was also a fire burning in him that no one could see.

The scene changed. When the next one appeared, the galaxy had already become the galaxy that belonged to True Morning Dao World. The middle-aged man held his wife in his arms and roared forlornly at the heavens. Within his roar was a disappointment towards life. It was a supreme state of suffering that came from the soul... and there were blood-red tears flowing down his cheeks.

"Four Great True Worlds, you slaughtered my entire race. You even refused to spare a baby and cursed him! Now, you took away my wife's life as well! If that's the case... then what is the point in me continuing to stay alive?!"

"I lost my home, my wife, my son... but I'm still alive, and there's only one purpose in me—I will overturn the entire Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos!"

"Not only will I make the entire True Morning Dao World to be made for Abyss, I will make the entire Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos... be made for Abyss!"

"If my son survives, then from now on, he will no longer be known as Su Yun. He will be known as Su Ming. This name Ming means to engrave, and I will have him carve the language of the Abyss in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, a language that will cause all the people in the universe to tremble!"

Su Ming lifted his head swiftly. His mind was torn in the mid of the loud bangs. As memories of the past rose to the surface in his head, he remembered everything!

With tears falling down his eyes, Su Ming arrived at the altar, right beside the coffin. He quietly stood there and stared at his mother's face. Su Ming then shuddered and knelt down...

The face was unfamiliar to him, but also familiar. He could not tell just what sort of emotions were in his mind at that moment. He only wanted to watch her in this place quietly, just like how she wanted to motivate him gently even while she wept, like how she wanted to protect him in the past even when she closed her eyes.

This was his mother.

"Ma..." Su Ming murmured.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1022 Build - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1022 Build

Chapter 1022 Build

Su Ming did not bother about time passing by him. He knelt beside the coffin and stared at his mother in it. He just watched, that's all he did.

Scattered on the altar and around it were a few stones shining with a golden light. Those stones... were the fifth stone Su Ming needed.

Yet then, he didn't even spare a glance at them. He knelt beside the coffin like a wanderer who had left his mother's side for a long, long time, and one day, he finally returned home, but he did not manage to see his kind mother waiting for him. Instead, the only thing he was met with was a tombstone.

The grief and the unstoppable flow of tears was born of the familial love shared between those of the same flesh and blood, a love that would never end. And Su Ming felt it, even though he had lived his entire life as an orphan.

Xu Hui stood by the side, then in silence came to Su Ming's side and knelt down with him.

After a long, long time, Su Ming lifted his head and cast a deep glance at the woman in the coffin before standing up slowly.

"I once thought that I was an orphan without a mother and father. The only ones who stayed by my side were my elder, Xiao Hong, and some playmates who grew up with me," Su Ming murmured.

Xu Hui stayed by his side and listened to him quietly. She knew that Su Ming did not need a person who would talk to him at that moment. What he needed was a listener.

"For my tribe, I could descend into madness. I could eat those herbs, even it meant throwing away my life in the process. I could make myself rush out of the house my elder sealed in the mid of my madness. I could fight together with my tribe members... The song of the xun in the past is something I still remember to this date. Tong Tong said she'll tell me a secret when I returned. I still remember it..." There was nostalgia in Su Ming's eyes, along with anguish.

"But one day I realized that all of it was fake. There was no Dark Mountain, no tribe. Even the playmates who grew up with me were a part of a scheme!

"In fact, for a long time I didn't want to believe that the girl whom I was infatuated with when I was a boy was also fake..." Su Ming smiled, and as he continued smiling, he started laughing loudly.

"The ninth summit is a home I found when I was lost. That is true, but fate loved playing tricks and made me come to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence... Only when I was here did I learn that I did have a mother... and a father." Su Ming lowered his head. With tears in his eyes, he stared at the woman in the coffin.

"If turning Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos into a place built for the Abyss and carving the language of the Abyss in the universe is your wish... then I will use my entire life to fulfill it!" Su Ming raised his right hand and seized the air in the direction of the coffin. Immediately, a fifth stone turned into golden light and flew into his hand

'In the past, I wanted to go to the Fifth True World to search for my Master, but now, I want to see Abyss Builders' homeland... because I am an Abyss Builder!' Su Ming did not say this sentence out loud. Instead, he shouted these words in his heart in a manner that would shock the heavens.

Before this, Su Ming might have known that he was an Abyss Builder, but in the depths of his heart, he never really acknowledged this status, and neither did he acknowledge that he was an Abyss Builder. All of the stories he had heard were just stories.

He did not empathize too much with them.

Yet now, everything had changed. The voice from his mother and the scenes in Su Ming's mind... All of these things caused him to no longer feel unfamiliar with the term Abyss Builder. It was no longer something unrelated to him. It did not matter whether it was the threat from the four Great True Worlds or his mother's words, all of them... caused Su Ming... to take the initiative and acknowledge his identity as an Abyss Builder for the first time.

At the instant he did so, the fifth kiln trembled viciously.

Multiple wills descended around Su Ming from all the dimensions of the fifth kiln. These wills manifested themselves and turned into countless powerful living spirits. At the instant their shadows appeared, they looked at Su Ming, bent their backs together, and bowed to him!

Among these living spirits was the one thousand feet tall tree, some powerful Fire Spirits, ferocious beasts with all kinds of strange appearances. All of them bowed, causing all the dimensions in the fifth kiln to tremble furiously.

Their wills fused together, and with the land where Su Ming was as the center, they formed a gigantic, illusory... kiln in the void!

The kiln was semi-transparent. Light flowed out from it and surrounded Su Ming, making it seem like he had turned into the core of the illusory kiln. As waves of light shone, Su Ming sensed the fifth kiln's acknowledgement towards him. At that moment, it did not let out rumbling sounds that were too loud, and neither were there changes that shook the sky and earth. However, Su Ming knew... that he had already become the master of the fifth kiln!

As it shuddered, all the dimensions in it looked as if they were about to crumble. At the moment the wills of the living spirits in it descended, all the people in the kiln sensed the great change, but they did not know the reason behind it.

Xuan Shang had his hands fastened on the ground so that his body could be fixed to the place and he would not be sucked away by the enormous vortex that had suddenly appeared in the sky.

Hua Yu's face was pale. As he laughed brokenly, he lay in a sea of flowers. His body was buried in mud, most of it already melted into nutrients to nourish the plant life around him.

By his side was Progenitor Long Hai. He stared at Hua Yu with a smile, and his body, which was originally just a Nascent Divinity, was now covered in flower petals, as if he was about to have it gather together again.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor was charging forward through a dimension when he lifted his head to look at the sky in shock. There, he saw the sky swaying violently.

Reverend Zi Long had an incredibly sullen expression as he stared at the island that was only thousands of feet away from him. On that island was a tree, and on that tree was a crimson fruit.

Yet now, as the ground shook and the mountains swayed in the dimension, the ground where the tree was collapsed.

If there was one person among the people who could have a slight clue as to what was happening, then he would be... Zhu You Cai.

At that moment, he was standing on a mountain. As booming sounds came from it as it swayed, the clouds in the sky tumbled about. While the whole world transformed, Zhu You Cai's expression changed swiftly.

"This is... the fifth kiln acknowledging its master! Could it be that there is someone among us who is an Abyss Builder?!"

At the same time, beyond the fifth kiln, the continent where Dust Burners lived had long since returned to its original state, but at that moment... all the Dust Burners threw their

heads back and roared. Their bodies transformed on their own and turned into those of Fire Spirits.

This had nothing to do with their levels of cultivation. Even Dust Burners' tribe leader and Progenitor could not control their bodies and turned into Fire Spirits. As they roared, all the Dust Burners heard a voice from their spirits echoing in their minds.

'The fifth kiln has acknowledged its master!'

Once Dust Burners' Progenitor turned into a Fire Spirit, a brilliant light shone in his eyes.

While in the void within the core of the fifth kiln, Su Ming sensed that the fifth kiln had acknowledged him as its master, and it would act according to his will. Su Ming remained silent for a moment before he lifted his right hand and swung it forward. Immediately, the figures surrounding the kiln disappeared. The countless dimensions around him also vanished, causing everything around him to return to normal. When Su Ming turned around, he took a step towards the void.

The coffin was still on the altar. And there would still be plenty of life force that would be sucked into the coffin to nourish the woman until she eventually woke up under the effect of the Rune.

If Su Ming wanted to, he could take away the fifth kiln, but he did not do so.

He would leave it in this place to continue attracting powerful warriors through the passage of time. Only by doing so could the Rune remain in effect, and only by doing so would his mother... have the chance of waking up someday.

When Su Ming vanished from the void, he brought Xu Hui and walked out of the fifth kiln to appear in the galaxy.

When he turned his head back, the fifth kiln behind him. Everything that he went through in it was like a dream.

Su Ming sighed softly, but the moment he did so, a flash of golden light instantly shot out of his storage bag, causing the area around him to immediately turn golden.

That golden color was different from the golden light that manifested from Su Ming. A vast amount of power spread out from the light, which seemed to possess a vague feeling that it could absorb the power of the universe. There was also a presence about it that seemed to not fit with Divine Essence Star Ocean, as if its appearance would immediately be detected by Divine Essence Star Ocean and be rejected by the galaxy!

Su Ming was momentarily stunned. When he dipped his head down to look at his storage bag, he sensed that the fifth stone he took and placed in his storage bag was

now shining with a golden light that stretched to one hundred thousand feet. With a bang, it forced its way out of the storage bag.

It was as if this item was something that absolutely could not stay inside once it left the fifth kiln. When it flew out, it did not fly into the distance, but floated around Su Ming and rotated around him nonstop.

The galaxy trembled while the golden light continued spreading out in all directions. When it reached a distance when no end to it could be seen, a great disaster that could stir up the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean... appeared!

Dust Burners who had turned into Fire Spirits had just returned to their former selves. At that moment, the heart of Dust Burners' Progenitor shuddered. He could clearly sense a power that was completely different from Divine Essence Star Ocean and did not fit with the galaxy traveling swiftly towards their continent from the fifth kiln.

"The fifth stone!" Dust Burners' Progenitor immediately raised his head.

The territory of the Reng Wu Race was in the core of Divine Essence Star Ocean and was pitch-black. When the fifth stone's presence spread out, countless pairs of eyes immediately opened up in the darkness. Within each of them was a madness that was similar to that of a wild beast.

"The fifth stone... Another fifth stone appeared. Snatch it! We have to snatch it!"

Muffled cries echoed in the darkness, and the madness in the eyes immediately reached its peak.

Virtue Rooters, the race who had the bodies of snakes and heads of humans opened their eyes within the karst cave they resided in as well. Hissing sounds echoed in the air, and a great will swiftly filled the entire planet.

"Find that presence that does not blend with Divine Essence Star Ocean, find the fifth stone... and bring it to me!"

Chapter 1023 Ashes

Besides Dust Burners, Heaven Traversers also remained silent. At that moment, even though they also noticed the fifth stone's presence, Heaven Traversers' Progenitor only opened his eyes while sitting cross-legged. Then he closed his eyes again, not attempting to snatch the fifth stone like he would have done in the past.

He knew that each time a fifth stone appeared, that presence which did not blend with the universe in this place would sweep through the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean and attract numerous beast swarms to fight over it.

Once they seized the fifth stone, they could head to the mysterious Fifth True World through that stone, and rumors regarding the Fifth True World had circulated in Divine Essence Star Ocean for a long time.

After all, the fifth kiln flew out from that place, and from the supreme treasures in there, it could be seen just how rich was that mysterious Fifth True World.

And... that place was already empty of life. If anyone obtained a serendipity in that empty galaxy, it would be incredibly great!

Even if they did not choose to go to the Fifth True World, as long as they had the fifth stone in their possession, they could choose to do one of two things with it. One of them was to pass it to the guardian races in the fifth ocean. They would offer an incredibly high price in exchange for the fifth stone.

The other would be... to refine the fifth stone into an Enchanted Treasure. They could borrow the power that did not blend with the laws in the galaxy and create... a supreme treasure that could cut through laws. It was not that there were no such treasure in Divine Essence Star Ocean, but most of them were legacy treasures of various races.

They were just like the runic symbol on Heaven Traversers' Progenitor in the past. When they created it, they had added the fifth stone in it!

These three temptations were enough to cause crazy fights over it, and the disaster that stirred up every single time the fifth stone appeared to be one filled with blood.

After all, it wasn't only the ferocious beasts and the races at the core of Divine Essence Star Ocean sense the fifth stone's appearance. All the races and ferocious beasts within the inner parts and the periphery also sensed the stone's appearance at that instant.

In fact... some of the Ancestral Spirits who were originally deep in sleep opened their eyes under the stimulation. The booming sounds coming from the regions in Divine Essence Star Ocean reached their most intense volume at that moment.

"The fifth stone..." The ground in a planet collapsed. A huge hand clenched its fingers into fist in the depths of the ground. A giant crept out of the earth. The giant had two heads and threw both of them back to roar at the sky.

"The fifth stone appeared again..." As faint sounds echoed in a wasteland covered in dust, a strange living creature with a semi-transparent body slowly gained corporeal form. When it stared into the distance, it moved in a flash and disappeared.

Scenes like this appeared in many places within the galaxy. Everyone's attention was directed... at the fifth stone!

During that instant, Su Ming also noticed the ripples of power from the fifth stone that did not blend with the fifth stone, and a glint appeared in his eyes. He understood why Tian Xie Zi was chased down by the four great alien races because of one fifth stone. In fact, there had definitely been other races and ferocious beasts who had went after his life as well.

'A stone like this...'

Su Ming stared at the fifth stone. When it was in the kiln, it did not stand out, but when it was in the world outside, it was as dazzling as the sun, because it did not belong to this world. Because of that... it was not accepted, and became a sharp weapon that could fight against the laws in this place!

This sort of stone would definitely be desired by others!

'It doesn't matter whether it's Heaven Traversers' Progenitor or Dust Burners, neither of them told me the truth. As for Dijiu Mo Sha, with his level of cultivation, he wouldn't have been able to know too much about the fifth stone.'

'Since it is such a treasure, no wonder it would stir up such a fight over it.'

Su Ming remained silent for a moment before he formed a seal with his right hand and pointed at the fifth stone with a finger. However, the stone did not move. It continued to stay beside Su Ming, shining with a golden light. It would not enter the storage bag.

Su Ming frowned, then a fierce glare appeared in his eyes. He opened his mouth and sucked in a deep breath in the direction of the fifth stone. It shuddered and rushed into Su Ming's mouth. It was instantly swallowed, and golden light spread out from Su Ming's body. After some time, it slowly vanished.

However, this was just a temporary suppression; it would not be long before the stone flew out again. Su Ming was able to hide it for a time only because his soul was that of an Abyss Builder, and they came from the Fifth True World, same as the fifth stone.

If Su Ming's real self had been there, he would have been able to completely accommodate the fifth stone and not have a single ripple of power spread out. However, he didn't have it, and so he could not hide the stone permanently.

Su Ming was silent for a moment before casting a glance at the fifth kiln and pointing at it.

When he did so, booming sounds came from the kiln, and it started trembling. A great sea of fire swiftly spread out from within it, making the kiln to look as if it was burning.

Immediately after, a couple figures were swept out by the impact of the flames and pushed out of the kiln. Among them were Xuan Shang, Reverend Zi Long, Flame Fiends' Progenitor, and also Progenitor Long Hai, whose body was no longer illusory.

The last to appear was Zhu You Cai.

These people were the survivors. As the fifth kiln trembled, they were all forcefully expelled from the dimensions in which they had been. Once they left the fifth kiln, all of them had different expressions on their faces when they looked at Su Ming.

These people had been close to the first border when they were in the fifth kiln. They had sacrificed a large amount of life force for that, but Su Ming did not feel at ease with them staying there, which was why he decided to have the fifth kiln chase all of them out.

He swept his gaze past the crowd before stopping on Zhu You Cai. This man was also looking Su Ming. The two of them met each other's gazes, and Zhu You Cai's eyes lit up swiftly.

"Huo Kui," Su Ming said faintly.

The eyes of Flame Fiends' Progenitor shone. When he looked at Su Ming, he took a few steps backwards. He might have left the fifth kiln, but he was incredibly weak at that moment, and his wariness towards Su Ming did not reduce. Instead, it had become greater.

"I promised you this corpse. Take it." As Su Ming spoke, he struck the storage bag with his right hand, and the corpse of the white-robed teenager who was the centipede immediately appeared in front of Su Ming. When he threw it, it charged towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor was stunned, then hesitated for a moment while looking at Su Ming.

But the other's expression remained empty. Not a single change could be detected on him.

With hesitation, Flame Fiends' Progenitor watched the corpse getting closer to him. He could not see through Su Ming's thoughts and did not know whether there was any form of trap waiting for him in that corpse, but if he gave up on it just like this, it would be incredibly difficult for him to find another corpse in Mastery Realm.

At that moment, he gritted his teeth. He believed that Su Ming should not be intending to kill him and that even if he wanted something from him, it wouldn't be something like the position of a guard due to his level of cultivation. Hence, resolve appeared in his eyes. He charged towards the corpse of the white-robed teenager. It was much stronger

than his previous physical body. Because of it, not only would he have not suffered any loss in this venture, he would have instead obtained a serendipity.

However, the instant he approached the white-robed teenager's corpse, Reverend Zi Long had already taken a step forward and appeared beside the corpse. He lifted his right arm and swung it, and the expression of Flame Fiends' Progenitor changed swiftly before he moved back swiftly.

"Fellow Daoist Zi Long, what is the meaning of this?!" Flame Fiends' Progenitor immediately demanded in a shrill voice.

"This person is a guest of the four Great True Worlds. I will take his corpse back," Reverend Zi Long said faintly, but he did not look at Huo Kui. Instead, he looked towards Su Ming.

"That's my war trophy," Su Ming said in a soft voice while staring at Reverend Zi Long with a frown. Besides a few people, there was not a single bit of fondness within him towards the four Great True Worlds. At that moment, as he said those words coldly, a gray tint gradually appeared in his hair.

"Oh? Then I'd like to see whether this war trophy of yours will belong to you."

A brilliant light shone in Reverend Zi Long's eyes. He paid no attention towards the matter of bringing the white-robed teenager's corpse back to the four Great True Worlds; he wasn't bothered by it in the least. What he paid attention to was the blood of Ancient Wu within it. If he refined that corpse's body and gathered together a hint of Ancient Wu's blood, his trip to the fifth kiln wouldn't have gone to waste.

Hence he absolutely wanted that corpse. As he spoke, he patted the white-robed teenager's corpse with his right hand and put it into his storage bag before casting a cold glance at Su Ming.

This scene caused the people around them to keep their expressions still. Xuan Shang took a few careful steps backwards. When he narrowed his eyes, he stared at Xu Hui and at the body of the supreme treasure she possessed at that moment, and a barely noticeable resentment as well as anger shone in his eyes.

Zhu You Cai did not speak. His expression remained the same, and his thoughts could not be seen.

As for Flame Fiends' Progenitor, his expression was dark, but he knew that even if he had a physical body at that moment, he would still not be Reverend Zi Long's opponent. He could only grit his teeth and tolerate it.

At that moment, Su Ming's hair had turned completely gray. This change was immediately seen by everyone, especially Reverend Zi Long. His pupils shrank in a

barely noticeable manner. The Su Ming at that moment suddenly gave him an incredibly dangerous feeling. It was a feeling of death, a cold, freezing presence that was akin to the arrival of midwinter.

That feeling caused him to instantly gather up his power, and a light lit up in his eyes.

The gray Su Ming signified extreme rationality and the power of hell. He no longer cared about his methods when he did things, but only about whether he would succeed in the end.

"Long Hai, if you still don't attack, then I will immediately crush your oath and make you lose your soul forever!" As Su Ming said those words in a cold voice, he swept his gaze towards Zhu You Cai.

"Fellow Daoist Change He, it is not impossible to resurrect your wife.

"Progenitor Huo Kui. This is your physical body, since I already gave it to you, then it has nothing to do with me anymore. I will help you attack, but you also have to fight for it yourself!"

The three sentences spoken flatly immediately caused Long Hai, Zhu You Cai, and Progenitor Huo Kui's expressions to change.

Reverend Zi Long's heart also suddenly let out a loud thump, and his expression changed drastically.

A monstrous savage glare appeared in Zhu You Cai's eyes, which had turned bloodshot. At that moment, he looked as if he had gone mad. He fixed his stare on Su Ming for a moment, then whipped his head around to reveal powerful killing intent. His power went into a rampage while he stared at Reverend Zi Long.

Long Hai's expression changed. Hostility appeared on his face when he glared at Zi Long.

As for Flame Fiends' Progenitor, his Nascent Divinity went into a rage. Killing intent flashed past his face, and burning flames erupted from within him.

The three of them split up into three different directions to surround Reverend Zi Long, and the gray Su Ming lifted his right hand. The Life Inequity Spear appeared with a buzz.

A freezing glare shone in Su Ming's eyes when he asked in a freezing tone, "Are you going to give me my war trophy back, or not?"

Chapter 1024 Promise

Reverend Zi Long's expression changed several times before he focused his gaze on Su Ming. After a moment, he looked towards the other three around him. The three sentences had allowed Su Ming to turn the tables and make Zi Long into the public enemy number one among them. He felt as if there was a sword hanging right over his head and he had a tiger by the tail.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor was still easy to deal with, and Reverend Zi Long did not pay special attention to him, but Progenitor Long Hai was an Almighty who had become famous many years ago. Even if he was only a Nascent Divinity and was no longer as he was during his peak, but when aided by Flame Fiends' Progenitor, he could be considered a real threat.

Besides, Progenitor Long Hai gave Reverend Zi Long a feeling that he wasn't really just a Nascent Divinity.

Then there was Zhu You Cai. Originally, Reverend Zi Long did not pay too much attention to him. Even if he was able to take action to save Su Ming when he had no power while they were on the mountain with that Mountain Shifter Art, Reverend Zi Long also had some methods at his disposal. That was why he had only cast him a sideways glance at that moment and raised his position only slightly higher.

What truly caused his heart to let out a thump against his chest was the name Su Ming had used to refer to that person just then. He had not called him Zhu You Cai... but Chang He!

Chang He... The instant Reverend Zi Long heard that name, only one person appeared in his mind!

The disciple of True Sacred Yin World's Sublime Paragon who was known as the future Kalpa Lord of True Sacred Yin World—the War Immortal Change He!

He was an Almighty in Life Realm and could look down on the entire universe. Due to him becoming estranged and subsequently having a falling out with his Master, he was exiled to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence!

Zi Long had been in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence for many years and had heard of Chang He's name before, but he had never been able to find a single hint of his presence in Divine Essence Star Ocean. That's why when he heard Su Ming's words, the shock Reverend Zi Long experienced was difficult to describe.

He stared at Zhu You Cai. After a long while, he shifted his gaze to Su Ming. The gray Su Ming brought about a great wave of wariness in him. It did not stem from his level of cultivation, but from his control over other people's emotions. With just three sentences, he had trapped Zi Long in the current situation, and hesitation rose in his heart.

This was a battle between Almightyies. He had not even taken action yet, but fear had already risen in his heart, and he was already hesitating. Because of it, there was absolutely no need to continue with this fight. He... would definitely lose!

It had been a long time since Reverend Zi Long had felt this sort of outrage. It was a different feeling from when he had been ambushed by Huang Mei and had his supreme treasure snatched from his hands. Instead, it was a humiliation of not being able to even struggle and fight back when he was threatened.

Freezing light shone in his eyes. It was quiet all around him. Su Ming stared at Zi Long coldly, not saying a word more.

The battle was about to break out at any moment.

'To fight or not to fight... If I fight, I cannot win... but if I don't fight and leave just like this, my reputation will be completely ruined!' Reverend Zi Long's heart was in conflict. In the mid of his uncertainty, his heart trembled, and understanding rose instantly in his mind again.

'What a well-executed persecution! If I fight, I don't have confidence to win, but if I don't fight, then this matter will leave behind a Brand in my heart, and as my heart hesitates, it will ruin my chances of heading into Fate Realm!

'And I am the one who brought this on myself...'

Reverend Zi Long gritted his teeth. A powerful fighting spirit rose in his eyes. He no longer hesitated. He would... fight this battle!

However, the instant he decided to fight, Zhu You Cai, Progenitor Long Hai, and Flame Fiends' Progenitor released ripples of power for the fierce battle to start, Su Ming suddenly spoke up.

"Do you want this item?"

As he spoke, he lifted his right hand, and a small puncture that looked as if it was left behind by a poisonous wasp was revealed on his palm. Thick waves of fragrance spread out from within it.

The instant that fragrance spread out, Su Ming clenched his fist, causing the fragrance to immediately disappear.

However, even if it just appeared for a single moment, that fragrance was enough for Zi Long's expression to change drastically. The fighting spirit in his eyes immediately turned chaotic again, under that attack against his heart.

He was not the only one affected. Zhu You Cai also lifted his head swiftly. Once he cast a glance at Su Ming, he lowered his head and no longer paid any attention to him. As for Progenitor Long Hai, his eyes sparkled, but he did not speak. Flame Fiends' Progenitor remained silent as well.

"What do you mean? What is that fragrance?" Zi Long's expression changed. He had only taken a whiff of that fragrance just then, but the cultivation base within him had already started circulating on its own. This change was caused his heart to pound in excitement.

"Leave behind the war trophy and become my guard for a year. Then I will give you ten times the amount of the fragrance you had just now. This is an oath," Su Ming answered flatly.

This was a way out for Reverend Zi Long, and his expression became sullen. After some time, he brought his right hand up and swung it forward. Immediately, the white-robed teenager's corpse was brought out of his storage bag and came to float in front of Su Ming.

If he could afford to not fight, then Zi Long did not want to fight.

"I'll remember your oath. I will protect you for a year in exchange for ten times the amount of the fragrance just now. I will accept this!" Once Reverend Zi Long finished speaking, he cast a cold glance at the other three beside him.

"I can give you the corpse." Su Ming's expression remained the same when it shifted to Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

"One year as your guard; I will definitely complete my task!" Flame Fiends' Progenitor said quickly. The thing he feared the most was Su Ming giving him the corpse without giving him the reason. That had caused him a great amount of internal conflict.

But at that moment, when he heard Su Ming stating his conditions, he immediately agreed to it, afraid that Su Ming would go back on his word. That was the reason why he quickly swore the oath to the universe as an Almighty.

"I left behind a seal on the corpse. Fuse into it," Su Ming said flatly.

Resolve appeared on Flame Fiends' Progenitor, and he turned into a long arc that charged towards the white-robed teenager's corpse. He fused into it in an instant, and the corpse immediately exuded purple flames as it shuddered.

The flames burned the corpse, causing it to gradually wither and dry up. It shrank continuously. Judging by the looks of it, he would need some time before he could completely occupy the corpse.

"Protect me for a year, and I will return you your freedom!" Su Ming turned his head around and looked towards Progenitor Long Hai.

The man remained silent for a moment before he swore an oath as an answer to Su Ming's request.

"One year later, I will give you hope to resurrect your wife." The final person Su Ming looked towards was Zhu You Cai.

He stared at Su Ming, and after a long while, he nodded. He was willing to give up on everything for a hope to resurrect his wife.

Su Ming raised his head to look at the galaxy. His long gray hair slowly changed. When it returned to his normal hair color, a glint appeared in his eyes, and he took a step forward. He turned into a long arc and charged into the distance.

Xu Hui immediately followed behind him. The other people followed in silence as well. Flame Fiends' Progenitor had already fused with his physical body and charged along with them.

Only Xuan Shang remained in the area. His expression was dark and sullen. He stared at the group leaving into the distance, and a sinister look appeared in his eyes.

'He needs these Almightyies to protect him? I wonder what his goal is... But none of this is in any way related to me anymore. However, you snatched Xuan Family's supreme treasure, and I... will definitely make you pay!'

The hatred in Xuan Shang's eyes was incredibly deep. As he let out a cold harrumph in his heart, he turned around. But just as he was about to leave, his body suddenly shuddered. At that moment, the fifth kiln was activated once again. As the flames from the kiln spread out, a powerful suction force came from it, giving Xuan Shang to no way to fight against it. He was swiftly sucked back into the fifth kiln.

The galaxy around the area gradually became calm once more...

"Xu Hui, I'm going to a place I know nothing about, you..." As Su Ming charged forward through the galaxy, he sent a divine thought to Xu Hui, who was by his side.

"The Fifth True World, right?" she asked calmly.

Su Ming turned his head around to cast a glance at Xu Hui. He did not speak, but continued charging forward. The people behind him also remained silent.

Time trickled by. Several days later, a thick layer of fog surrounded the galaxy ahead of them. Su Ming stopped just outside the fog.

Xu Hui knew this spot. This was the place where Dust Burners' tribe was located.

The moment Su Ming and the others arrived, the fog in the area immediately started tumbling about furiously. An indistinct figure walked out, and when he approached the group, his body was no longer a mere illusion, but gained corporeal form and turned into Dust Burners' Progenitor.

He swept his gaze past Su Ming, Zi Long, and the others behind him. Eventually, in silence... he bent his back and bowed towards Su Ming.

He was bowing to the current master of the fifth kiln.

"Progenitor, I would like to trouble you to send her to the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean." Su Ming cast a glance at Xu Hui, then looked towards Dust Burners' Progenitor before he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed towards him as well.

Dust Burners' Progenitor lifted his head, looked towards Xu Hui, and nodded.

Xu Hui was silent for a moment, then asked quietly, "You're set on going alone?"

"Go back and wait for me at the entrance to where the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds are stationed," Su Ming said calmly.

Xu Hui fell silent, then sighed softly and did not say anything else.

"Progenitor, please." Su Ming bowed again.

"Don't worry. I will ensure her safety along the way. If you truly reach that place... remember that there is a place called Burning Dust Planet. It is said that it is Fire Spirits' birthplace. Please retrieve... a handful of dirt from there for me.

"Also... now that you have the fifth stone... you must be careful." Dust Burners' Progenitor delivered this sentence to Su Ming's mind through a divine thought.

When he saw Su Ming nodding, he swung his arm and turned into a burning fire cloud that swept up Xu Hui's body and charged into the distance. But at that moment, a shrill cry rang through space.

"Damn you, you old fool, I won't be going back!"

In the mid of that loud shout came a cold harrumph from Dust Burners' Progenitor in the fire cloud. At the same time, a long arc flew out from the fire cloud. It turned into the bald crane which swiftly returned to Su Ming's side.

When it moved, it could not see Xu Hui staring at Su Ming behind it while she was being swept away by the fire cloud. Her gaze gradually went farther into the distance until it

disappeared from the galaxy, and their companionship that had lasted for nearly one hundred years... ended.

Su Ming stared at the fire cloud leaving into the distance until it vanished from his field of vision. Then, when he turned around, his long hair turned gray, and his pupils gained a gray gleam, and not a single shred of emotion was left in him.

"My fellow Daoists, there will definitely be fierce battles during this one year. The promises I made to all of you will last just like how the universe will last for eternity. I will definitely not go back on my word. I will... have to trouble all of you during this year."

Su Ming stared at Zi Long and the others, then with a cold look in his eyes, he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed towards them.

"Since we're guards, you should at least tell us the reason why you want us to protect you," Progenitor Long Hai suddenly said.

Chapter 1025: One Year

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Su Ming cast a glance at Progenitor Long Hai with a cold and merciless gaze. Progenitor Long Hai also turned his eyes to Su Ming. The two of them stared into each other's eyes for a moment, until Progenitor chose to look away.

Zi Long might have seemed as composed as ever, but he was also staring at Su Ming. Clearly, he also wanted to know just what reason might cause Su Ming to want them to become his guards.

The curiosity within Flame Fiends' Progenitor was much less compared to the others. This was different from his previous personality, but ever since he met Su Ming, his experiences with him had caused his wariness towards Su Ming to be etched deep in his bones. When he was before Su Ming, Flame Fiends' Progenitor had only one simple thought in his mind—Do not fight back, do not refuse him, do not be greedy... as long as there was nothing wrong with the physical body that he should obtain.

Compared to the other three, Zhu You Cai was calm. Even if Su Ming had a supreme treasure in his hands, unless it was an item that could resurrect his wife, he would not be interested in it. He had even given away his Life Inequity Spear, so there was no way there would be another supreme treasure in the world that would tempt him.

He also understood that Su Ming knew about his origins. Asking him to be a guard was just secondary. His real reason... might be to have Zhu You Cai to keep the others in check.

Su Ming avoided Progenitor Long Hai's gaze. He instead opened his mouth in a cold manner, and a flash of gold instantly flew out. When it surrounded him, it turned into the fifth stone.

When that stone appeared, the universe around them instantly tumbled about. The space around them distorted, and ripples spread out in all directions. A presence that did not blend with the world erupted from the fifth stone.

Once it appeared, Progenitor Long Hai's pupils shrank swiftly.

"This is... the fifth stone!" he said immediately.

"The fifth stone..." Reverend Zi Long's expression also changed. He stared at the fifth stone, and a hint of hesitation appeared on his face, but he soon calmed down. He knew that... this was an item that he could not keep!

Even if he managed to snatch it, he could not take it away from Divine Essence Star Ocean, and most importantly, he did not have the confidence to snatch it.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor licked his lips and forced down the instinctive greed that rose in his heart. If this item had been on anyone else, he might have some thoughts in his head, but when it came to Su Ming, the fire of greed in him was immediately extinguished.

Zhu You Cai was the most composed. He first cast a glance at the fifth stone, then at Su Ming, and a barely noticeable smile appeared on his lips.

He knew that if Su Ming dared bring out the fifth stone, had the courage to let him see it, and even promised to give him hope in resurrecting his wife, then it could only mean one thing!

'He is an Abyss Builder!' Once he connected that to the fifth kiln acknowledging its master, everything immediately became clear in his mind.

"What you will need to block is all the people who come here to snatch the fifth stone," Su Ming said flatly.

"Progenitor Huo Kui, this new physical body of yours is stronger than your previous body. Is it enough for you?"

"Progenitor Long Hai, it doesn't matter whether your previous oath is one thousand years or ten thousand years, you can complete it in just one year. Is this enough for you?"

Su Ming looked towards Reverend Zi Long.

"But to me, it doesn't seem to be enough," Zi Long said faintly.

"It is God Ascension Nectar." Su Ming's expression was calm, but the instant he said his sentence, his words did not echo in space, because his divine thought was reverberating in Reverend Zi Long's mind.

At the instant he heard God Ascension Nectar's name, Zi Long's body trembled viciously. When he lifted his head to stare at Su Ming, a hint of surprise appeared in his eyes. After a long while, he nodded in a solemn manner.

Su Ming looked towards Zhu You Cai and did not speak. After they stared into each other's eyes for a moment, he averted his gaze. There were times when there was no need for words and two parties could understand one another without a word.

When Su Ming turned around, he became a long arc that charged forward. The crowd followed him and left into the galaxy in the distance.

Time passed. Ten days later, at the depths of Divine Essence Star Ocean's core, Su Ming found... the fifth ocean based on the jade slip Dust Burners' Progenitor had given him in the past.

It was... an ocean that existed in the galaxy.

The waves surged up in space, and everyone could clearly hear them crashing in the galaxy before they even got close to the area.

That strange ocean was boundless. It was something that was incredibly difficult to find in any other place besides Divine Essence Star Ocean.

If there was an ocean, then there was definitely a beach. At the edge of the ocean were countless shattered planets. They were reduced to flying stones that formed a dazzling beach.

If anyone took a closer look, they would be able to see... that the ocean was in truth not made of water. Instead, it was made of deep blue powder that gathered together. It floated around the area like aura, giving people the idea that they were looking at an ocean when they saw it from the distance.

Booming sounds echoed in space and would continue doing so for all eternity.

When the group approached a shattered stone on the beach of the fifth ocean, Su Ming stopped and stared at the ocean. At the same time, a dazzling light erupted from the fifth stone that surrounded him.

That light swiftly turned into a long arc and rushed into the fifth ocean. That long arc shot forth, causing the waves in the area to tumble about and roll backwards to form into a tunnel within a vortex. Even Su Ming could not see the end it.

Booming sounds reverberated in space, causing the entire galaxy to tremble.

Su Ming fell silent. Based on the descriptions on the jade slip, when the fifth stone appeared in the fifth ocean, it would open up a tunnel on its own, and it would be... the path that would lead them to the Fifth True World.

A tunnel was needed for this path to be fully opened, but soon after, it would close up. Yet for an instant, it would allow people to pass through it.

'One year...'

Su Ming raised his right hand and the Life Inequity Spear appeared. Once he held it in his hand, he pierced the shattered stone beneath him, then sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes.

The instant he closed his eyes, Zhu You Cai also sat down cross-legged beside him. He knew his duty. He was not protecting the fifth stone... but Su Ming.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor also found a shattered stone not too far away and sat down to meditate while waiting for the fierce battles that would definitely arrive soon.

Progenitor Long Hai remained still for a moment, then chose a shattered stone farther away. Once he sat down, he raised his head and stared at the galaxy. No one knew what he thought about.

Reverend Zi Long stood with his eyes closed and did not move, but in his heart, the sentence Su Ming said ten days ago still echoed.

'God Ascension Nectar... There's no doubt about it. That was definitely God Ascension Nectar, only this item that had already become extinct and is only spoken about in legends could possess such a thick fragrance. Only that item could make my cultivation base tremble when I took a mere whiff of its fragrance.'

Time trickled by, and in the blink of an eye, half a month was gone. During it, besides the loud booms, no other sounds could be heard around the fifth ocean. No one came to the place either, but it was precisely because of this that the group's hearts became even more on guard.

During that half a month, Su Ming sat without moving. He did not open his eyes, making it seem as if he was deep in sleep. He waited quietly for time to pass, for the inevitable arrival of thieves.

Another twenty-five days passed as quickly as lightning. The final day of the first month of a year passed like normal, when suddenly, the meditating Zhu You Cai opened his eyes. He was the first among them to do so.

A moment later, Zi Long exuded the ripples of power that belonged to his cultivation base. When he opened his eyes, he looked into the distance.

Right after him was Progenitor Long Hai. The last to notice what was going on was Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

The moment he opened his eyes, an intense rumble passed through the galaxy in the distance, and a long arc charged forward. Within it was a gigantic meteor, about ten thousand feet high, and it was chafing against space while charging to the area.

Standing on the meteor was a big and burly man. He was thirty feet tall and looked half-baked. As his hair fluttered, a brilliant light shone in his eyes.

Behind him was a brownish yellow tail, and it was wrapped around him, causing the man to look incredibly strange and enchanting. Due to the bright light, all those in the vicinity could see that his eyes were not of a normal person's color, but yellow.

His pupils were vertical.

When he approached, he saw Zi Long with the others at first glance. His pupils constricted, and the meteor came to an abrupt halt ten thousand feet away.

He glared at Su Ming, who was surrounded by Zi Long and the others. The fifth stone was shining with a dazzling light in front of the youth, and a hint of greed appeared briefly in the man on the meteor's eyes.

However, he did not act rashly. Instead, he chose to sit down and stare at them coldly.

Zi Long frowned. There might be a hint of wildness in him, but he also valued oaths highly. Since he already promised to guard Su Ming for a year and Su Ming's offer for his help was tempting enough, no other thoughts rose in his heart. Of course, Su Ming's own power was also great enough to deserve his attention. Besides, Zi Long had also managed to tell what was different about Zhu You Cai as well as the strange connection the two shared.

Because of that, lashing back at Su Ming would do him no good. It would be better for him to take the normal route and fulfill his end of the promise.

"Fellow Daoist Long Hai, one year is not really long. It's short enough to last for the duration of a session of meditation. However, this one year will not be easy... This person's level of cultivation is similar to yours. Do you want to go and warm up?" Zi Long asked flatly.

"Why would I be unwilling to?" Progenitor Long Hai stood up and laughed. Once he stretched his limbs for a moment, petals appeared above his Nascent Divinity. They filled the area around him, and when they covered his body, it seemed like he possessed a physical body.

With a single move, he turned into a flying flower that rushed at the man on the meteor ten thousand feet away.

The man's pupils shrank and he stood up. A ferocious smile appeared on his lips. What he wanted was not to fight, but to wait. Even if the people guarding the owner of the fifth stone had outstanding power, he believed that as time passed and more people came to this place... their power would become insignificant!

With a bang, the duo engaged in battle. As loud booming sounds reverberated in the air, waves of impact filled the area. In less than the time taken for half an incense stick to burn, long arcs charged over from the distant galaxy. This time, there was not just one, but nearly one hundred of them.

Within each long arc was a living spirit from Divine Essence Star Ocean. Some of them had the shape of humans, and some of them had the shapes of beasts. All of them were coming to the area extremely quickly, but none of them were Almighty.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor let out a cold harrumph. Without the need for anyone to give him a command, he rushed forward instantly, immediately stirring up a purple sea of fire that swept through the area.

Chapter 1026: Chang He

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

The second month during the period of one year required the opening of the tunnel to the Fifth True World.

On this month, booming sounds surged into the heavens in the area beyond the fifth ocean. The sounds of battle echoed in all directions, and a thick, bloody stench spread out through the entire area, causing the place to turn into a place of disaster.

From the moment Progenitor Long Hai attacked, he never returned to rest, and it was the same for Flame Fiends' Progenitor. Living spirits continuously rushed over, and they reached such great numbers that even Reverend Zi Long did not hesitate to attack.

By then, there were three days left until the end of the second month, but the battle in that place had already reached an incredibly intense state.

Fighting against Reverend Zi Long was a giant with two heads. He was strong and practically of equal strength. Booming sounds echoed in the galaxy due to their divine abilities.

There was an old woman near Progenitor Long Hai. They kept exchanging blows.

As for the ferocious beasts and the other races from Divine Essence Star Ocean, they were all handled by Flame Fiends' Progenitor alone. None among them were Almightyies, but there were quite a lot of them who were in Solar Kalpa Realm, and since the swarm numbered to thousands, only the sea of fire from Flame Fiends' Progenitor could surround them and prevent them from rushing out.

Time passed, and soon, the second month was over. When the third month arrived, the battle reached its peak, because a group of people with the bodies of snakes—Virtue Rooters—had rushed to the area. There were thousands of them, and while the person leading them was not in Mastery Realm, he was only half a step away from it!

All Virtue Rooters were incredibly powerful, and when they closed in, the sounds of battle surged into the sky.

But they were not alone. Almost at the same time, two long arcs charged forward from the galaxy. Those were two gigantic dark turtle that were one thousand feet big.

A man was sitting on one of them, while a woman on the other. The man was green-skinned, and there was a red glare in his eyes while freezing air spread out from his body. As for the woman, she was incredibly alluring. She did not have a lot of articles of clothing on her person, and there was a seductive look on her face. She was an incredibly tempting sight to others.

"The fifth ocean is certainly lively, no?" The woman chuckled in a coquettish manner and patted the dark turtle beneath her. That turtle immediately increased its speed.

Their arrival and the large number of Virtue Rooters instantly changed the tides of battle. Progenitor Long Hai's expression changed, the pupils of Flame Fiends' Progenitor shrank, and as for Reverend Zi Long, he frowned. The three of them might not have used all their strength, but judging by the situation right then, even if they attacked with all they had, they might still not be able to see persevere.

After all, this was just the third month, and that meant there were nine more months left for the duration of one year.

At the instant Zi Long, Long Hai, and Hui Kui hesitated, Zhu You Cai, who had been sitting beside Su Ming all this while with a calm expression opened his eyes.

He stood up slowly, and the instant he did so, a presence that was completely discordant with his big and plump body erupted from him. As the presence filled the space around, Zhu You Cai closed his eyes.

When he opened them again, he gave off a feeling as if he had transformed into another person. He was like a sharp spear that had been unsheathed. A sharp aura that shook the sky and earth erupted from him with a bang.

He raised his right hand and seized the space in the direction towards Su Ming. The Life Inequity Spear in front of Su Ming shuddered violently and let out a loud buzz that sounded like a delighted cheer before it flew up and landed in Zhu You Cai's right palm.

Once he held the spear, the aura about Zhu You Cai's body rose again and swept up the galaxy, disrupting the space around the area, affecting the laws, and shocking all the people currently fighting beyond the fifth ocean.

The hearts of everyone, no matter who they were, trembled at that instant. Their cultivation bases started showing signs of waning as if they had begun withering. It shocked them, and they looked in the direction from which the terrifying ripples of power originated.

Even though Zhu You Cai was still as fat as ever, his image changed. With the long spear in hand and his aura growing stronger by leaps and bounds, everyone thought they were not looking at a plump person, but a giant who could hold up the entire sky!

In fact, as the space behind Zhu You Cai distorted, an indistinct figure appeared. It was a middle-aged man—a white-haired man with an expression of grief and utter despair due to having given up on all hope!

At that moment, he was not Zhu You Cai... but True Sacred Yin World's War Immortal Chang He!

There were clearly two souls in his body. One of them was Zhu You Cai, and the other was Chang He. These two souls would occasionally fuse together, but more often be separate from each other. But at that moment, Chang He's will stood tall in the universe.

With his right hand holding onto the spear, he looked as if he was lifting it slowly before him, and once he did so, Zhu You Cai lowered his head and mumbled softly.

"What joy is there in living?" With a soft sigh, he swung the long spear through the galaxy before him.

That one sweep caused the galaxy to instantly fall silent. The space in front of Zhu You Cai was torn apart, the damage spreading outwards. As it expanded, it grew larger until it eventually turned into a gigantic tear in space that was one hundred thousand feet long.

It had looked like the spread had been slow, but everything in the galaxy seemed to have become still. Because of it, the slow rip was no longer slow, but something progressing extremely quickly!

As it swept through the area, it first crashed into the dual-headed giant fighting against Reverend Zi Long. There was shock in the giant's eyes, but he was instantly covered by the tear, unable to dodge it. Then, the tear swept past the two people fighting against Progenitor Long Hai.

The near thousand cultivators fighting against Flame Fiends' Progenitor, the thousands of Virtue Rooters who came, the cold man sitting on the dark turtle and the coquettish woman sitting on the other turtle all... were visited by that one hundred thousand feet long tear in space.

When it disappeared out of sight, everything returned to normal, as the world had recovered from being frozen still.

But when that happened, there were no pain-filled screams, no struggles. The dual-headed giant in front of Zi Long was simply torn to shreds. Even his Nascent Divinity did not manage to escape, reduced to nothingness.

The two people in front of Long Hai suffered the same ending. There were no exceptions to the thousands of Virtue Rooters, either. No matter what level of cultivation they possessed, they were all reduced to ashes at that instant.

The man and woman who had just arrived on the dark turtles also became part of space at the instant the galaxy recovered from being frozen.

It was just as Zhu You Cai had said just then.

"What joy is there in living?"

It would be better to die in battle!

The entire area was in dead silence...

Reverend Zi Long shuddered. This scene was completely out of his expectations and had happened too suddenly, not giving him the chance to do anything. If Zhu You Cai had wanted to kill him, then no matter how many Zi Longs there were, it would have still been difficult for him to even try to fight back. He would have faced the same fate as all those before his eyes—they were reduced to dust.

'An Almighty in Life Realm! He's really the War Immortal Chang He!' Reverend Zi Long's face turned pale. When he looked at Zhu You Cai, fear showed up in his eyes.

Progenitor Long Hai was already stunned to his feet. Even if he was an Almighty in Mastery Realm, Life Realm was something inconceivable to him, something he did not even dare dream about. After all, reaching Fate Realm was already his greatest desire. Life Realm... It was something he never even thought about being in his reach.

To him, the might of those in Life Realm was the same as what a cultivator in Qi Condensation would feel when they ran into those in Nascent Soul.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor shuddered. During that instant, even though he did not die, he still sensed the life force of the thousands of people around him instantly vanishing.

'An Almighty in Life Realm. The Art to reverse life and death? Is this... Is this Zhu You Cai?

'This isn't any ordinary show of power in Life Realm. This is the sign of those about to head into Death Realm. Only they can reverse life and death like this!' Reverend Zi Long raised his head swiftly, and when he looked at Zhu You Cai, there was a zealous look in his eyes.

Su Ming had long since opened his eyes. He stared at Zhu You Cai standing in front of him, and he saw the loneliness on the illusory man as well as the despair born out of loneliness and pain.

He remembered all the scenes he'd seen when he obtained the Life Inequity Spear.

As the prodigy of True Sacred Yin World, the disciple of a Sublime Paragon, the future Kalpa Lord of True Sacred Yin World, Chang He... could only watch helplessly as his lover turned into a medicinal core. When his Master asked him to swallow it to step into Death Realm, Chang He chose to struggle and fight back for the first time in his life.

He chose the mad act of saying 'no' to his own Master!

He was willing to give up on everything to get back what mattered that he'd lost. If he was to head into Death Realm in this manner... he would much rather not have it!

"What joy is there in living?" Su Ming muttered softly.

Zhu You Cai lowered his head, and his presence instantly disappeared. When he returned to his original appearance, he let go of the long spear in his hand. That spear let out a mournful buzz and returned to Su Ming's side.

Zhu You Cai sat down and closed his eyes. An apathetic expression appeared on his face, along with fatigue.

There was a sadness that no one else could sense deeply within him, and it was a sadness that only Su Ming could see, because he had seen his story. That sadness... had already fused with his soul.

Zi Long and the other three returned quietly and sat down cross-legged around the area. Occasionally, they would look towards Zhu You Cai, and there would be a great amount of respect on their faces.

After a long while, Su Ming closed his eyes again.

Time passed. The third month, the fourth, and when the fifth months went by, but no other existences from Divine Essence Star Ocean arrived at the fifth ocean. It was as if... this place had become a forbidden region.

The bloody stench that filled the area beyond the fifth ocean and the presence from the dimensional tear that would not disappear caused all the people who arrived to choose to leave as their expressions changed.

However, when the sixth month arrived... the most mysterious race among the four great alien races beyond the fifth ocean arrived. Along with them was their Progenitor... and an old Virtue Rooter who walked out of space with graying hair as well as rotting scales.

They stood tens of thousands of feet away from Su Ming and the others beyond the fifth ocean. When they looked into the distance, a freezing glare appeared in their eyes.

"It's been six months. The guardians of the fifth ocean should have appeared by now."

Chapter 1027 Part Ways

Reng Wu Race was the most mysterious race among the four great alien races in the core of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

They had existed for countless years and had not experienced any form of decline. They had always occupied the spot of the strongest race in Divine Essence Star Ocean, their position never having been shaken.

Staying in the core of Divine Essence Star Ocean for a long time and fighting against numerous ferocious beasts had created generations of powerful warriors in this race, and at the same time, they had also... assimilated with those ferocious beasts!

The appearance of their people was quite different. Although some of them still remained some human physical traits, many had abandoned their human forms and adopted ferocious appearances of half-beasts.

At that moment, when the members of Reng Wu race appeared in the fifth ocean, they immediately attracted the gazes of Zi Long and the others. When they looked over, their expressions changed.

Among the Reng Wus, there was not just one Almighty in Mastery Realm... there were three!

Just that alone was enough to make Reng Wu Race become the head of the four venerated races... but besides these three, the old man with white hair standing at the forefront was standing in space with bare feet, which were covered in scales. The other parts of his body were no different from a normal person, but the power he exuded was strong enough to suppress the other three Almighties in Mastery Realm behind him.

This person was the current Progenitor of Reng Wu. His power... could make the space around him distort, and based on it, he could turn the laws around where he stood into the laws of fate. Clearly... he was an Almighty in Fate Realm!

However, this was still secondary. Reng Wus had a mighty pressure that was faint and indistinct around them. It came from their blood, and it was a form of summons that was hidden in them.

This summons gathered the power of the previous Progenitors of Reng Wu over the countless years and turned it... into a protection, which allowed Reng Wus to become the strongest race in Divine Essence Star Ocean.

This protection was so strong that even Zhu You Cai opened his eyes.

The entire area was filled with silence. Reng Wus who had arrived with bloodshot eyes that showed their madness, but they stood without moving, incredibly quiet.

The more they did so, the more thick and mighty pressure surrounded the area.

Beside Reng Wus' Progenitor was Virtue Rooters' Progenitor, who had graying hair, the body of a snake, and a head of a human, and whose scales were rotting. At that moment, a sinister glare shone in his eyes.

"The ripples of power from the appearance of the fifth stone this time surpassed the appearances before, which is why so many people were lured to this place. But I can choose not to fight over that stone. I only want... that person's head!" Virtue Rooters' Progenitor lifted his right hand and pointed at Su Ming.

"If it wasn't because the ripples were strongest ever recorded in history, I wouldn't have come here personally either." A hoarse voice tumbled slowly out of the mouth of the Reng Wus' Progenitor.

"Lock down the area. Notify all outsiders that this place... has been occupied by us Reng Wus for the next six months. Those who step in will be wiped out along with their whole race."

A barely noticeable glint appeared in the old Reng Wu's eyes. When he spoke flatly, hundreds of Reng Wus immediately appeared behind him. They moved back without a single sound until they were one hundred thousand feet away. They were connected to each other in a arc-shaped line. Dark light spread out from their bodies, and from the distance, they looked as if they had formed a lock.

"We don't even need to take action. The guardian of the fifth ocean has already arrived." A cold sneer appeared on the old Reng Wu's face. As he spoke, the whole fifth ocean started tumbling furiously.

As it tumbled about, booming sounds reverberated in space ferociously. This change immediately attracted Zi Long and the others' attention. When they looked over, booming sounds rose up nonstop, and four figures could be seen vaguely rushing forward.

After them were countless long arcs who approached the place with loud roars.

They were indistinct due to the sea of fog covering them. When the group managed to see their faces properly, the expressions of Zi Long and the others immediately changed drastically.

The four people at the forefront wore white masks. Each of them had a different expression: happiness, anger, grief, and resentment. As for the people in the long arcs behind them, they were a group of expressionless people dressed in black leather armor.

These people charged forward as those long arcs and in no time appeared behind Su Ming and the others.

Su Ming opened his eyes while seated, and a strange light shone in them.

'They're finally here,' Su Ming thought quietly in his heart. In truth, the instant he activated the fifth stone and the long arc shot through the fifth ocean, he sensed the presences of the guardians within the depths.

"Offering!" A voice that no one else could hear echoed in Su Ming's heart at that moment. This was a voice that only the person with the fifth stone could hear—the voice of the fifth ocean's guardians.

When Su Ming heard it, he closed his eyes.

The situation they were in right then was one where the Reng Wu Race locked the area in front of them, and the guardians of the fifth ocean appeared behind them. A powerful sense of danger immediately surged up in Zi Long and the others' hearts.

The danger was especially strong from the four people in white masks. The cold look in their eyes and the ripples of power spreading out from their bodies showed that they were all Almighties in Mastery Realm.

In the mid of the harsh and grim atmosphere within the fifth ocean, the person with the Mask of Happiness said faintly, "Give up the fifth stone, and all of you will be free to leave."

When he said that, the galaxy around the area immediately rumbled. Countless bolts of lightning appeared in all directions. As the people spoke, a region of lightning formed around them.

"With just words, he brought about lightning!" Zi Long's expression changed again, and he instinctively took a few steps backwards.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor turned pale. By his side, Long Hai's eyes sparkled. He cast a glance at Su Ming, then at Zhu You Cai.

"Freedom might be precious, and the chance of using one year to redeem my freedom instead of one thousand or ten thousand years might be rare, but if the price for it is my life, then I will have to choose again," Progenitor Long Hai said calmly, and he moved back slowly.

"I will be considered to have gone against our promise, so you can treat it as me not having fulfilled my oath. If you want to crush the oath, I will be helpless to do anything about it." As Progenitor Long Hai spoke, he moved back swiftly and charged towards the Reng Wus.

"Progenitor of Reng Wus, do you still remember me? I did all this because I was forced by an oath, which is why I had to defend this place. Now, since there is no longer hope in turning the tables, please open the path and let me leave. I will surely repay in the future." Progenitor Long Hai wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed to the Reng Wus.

A glint shone in Reng Wus' Progenitor's eyes, and a faint smile appeared at the corners of his mouth.

"I see, so it is fellow Daoist Long Hai. I see no problem in this. My other fellow Daoists, if you want to leave, I will definitely not make it hard for you. What we want is only the fifth stone and the person who possesses it. As for the others, all of you may leave."

As he spoke, he lifted his right hand. Immediately, the people behind him split into two directions and revealed a path. Progenitor Long Hai charged quickly towards that area

and bowed towards Reng Wus' Progenitor again. He turned into a long arc, then left into the distance through the tunnel that was opened up.

Not a single hint of change appeared on Su Ming's expression because of Progenitor Long Hai's departure. He still stayed with his eyes closed, as if he was meditating, and did not move.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor hesitated for a moment. When he looked towards Su Ming, conflict appeared in his eyes. After a long while, he heaved a long sigh. He could imagine that Long Hai had prepared for this since the start, which was why he could do this so freely and casually, but for Flame Fiends' Progenitor...

Zi Long was silent. He cast a glance at Su Ming, then looked behind him before finally settling on Zhu You Cai for a moment. Then, he lowered his head and bowed towards Su Ming. He did not mention the matter about the God Ascension Nectar. As he turned around, he rushed towards the Reng Wus.

He, too, chose to give up.

It was not that Zi Long did not consider Zhu You Cai being able to resolve everything in this predicament, but when he saw the Reng Wus, that belief was shaken. Others might not know much about the Reng Wus, only that this race was mysterious and lived in Divine Essence Star Ocean, but it wasn't the case for him.

As someone from one of the four Great True Worlds, he had done a detailed investigation in regards to the Reng Wus, and he knew that there was a mysterious legacy among them. That legacy allowed each of their Progenitors to leave behind their Nascent Divinity once their bodies returned to the earth. Each generation's Nascent Divinity would be gathered to add to the existence that akin to a God.

That existence was the true reason behind why the four Great True Worlds were wary of Reng Wus.

That existence's level of cultivation was the Reng Wu Race's greatest secret, and they did everything they could to hide all information regarding it.

Only the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds could dig out a little. Based on their analysis, that existence should have some defects and limitations, but even so, it could still... make the Sublime Paragons from the four Great True Worlds turn their gazes away and never come to this place to interfere with the race's growth.

That was why Zi Long, who already had his will shaken when he saw the Reng Wu Race, no longer possessed any confidence when it came to the point that even the guardians from the fifth ocean showed up. Especially when he saw the four people with the masks of happiness, anger, grief, and resentment.

The four people of happiness, anger, grief, and resentment might have looked as if they were only in Mastery Realm, but Zi Long knew that they were existences that had lived for a very, very long time, and happiness, anger, grief, and resentment were legacies that were passed down through generations.

Which was why he chose to leave. God Ascension Nectar might be important, but compared to his life, it was only secondary.

When Flame Fiends' Progenitor saw that Zi Long was also leaving, the conflict in his heart reached its peak, but when he looked towards Su Ming again, he clenched his teeth tightly... and did not choose to leave.

At that moment, not even Huo Kui himself knew why he chose that. It was just that when he was beside Su Ming in the fifth kiln, the miracles he witnessed had shocked him continuously. They gave him to a vague feeling that Su Ming... should be able to resolve the crisis.

When the guardian from the fifth ocean, the person with the Mask of Happiness, let out a cold harrumph and moved forward, overlapping shadows appeared swiftly on his body, as if a clone was about to be separated from him.

His real self was still there, but the clone stepped out and walked on lightning to charge towards Flame Fiends' Progenitor. A fierce glare shone in the eyes of Flame Fiends' Progenitor. Since he had already decided to stay, he naturally made all preparations necessary for a fight. The instant the clone of the person with the Mask of Happiness closed in, Flame Fiends' Progenitor rushed forward, and the two of them immediately stirred up a series of loud bangs in the middle of space.

Chapter 1028 Happiness, Anger, Grief, Resentmen

At the same time, the three people with the Masks of Anger, Grief, and Resentment took a step forward at the same time. Their clones also appeared. Wind, rain, and thunderbolts immediately erupted from their clones. They split into three directions and charged towards Su Ming.

Su Ming still had his eyes closed and was still meditating. A glint appeared in Zhu You Cai's eyes. He took a swift step forward and walked towards the three people who were coming towards them.

At that moment, the Reng Wus' Progenitor had a dark smile on his lips. With one move, he turned into the distortions in space and took a step towards the place where Su Ming was. Behind him, the Virtue Rooters' Progenitor and the three Almighties in Mastery Realm... and the large number of Reng Wus also took a step forward.

Boom!

At the edge of the fifth ocean was the galactic beach formed by shattered stones. It shuddered abruptly, and as it trembled, the Reng Wus approached en masse. It was especially so for the Reng Wus' Progenitor. He was so quick that he reached Su Ming's side in the blink of an eye.

At that moment, the Flame Fiends' Progenitor was being held back by the clone of the person with the Mask of Happiness from the fifth ocean. Zhu You Cai was fighting against the remaining three clones. When he turned his back around, a brilliant light shone in his eyes. He brought his right hand up, and a piercing purple light immediately erupted swiftly from the Life Inequity Spear in front of Su Ming.

This light swept through the area swiftly. Booming sounds instantly echoed in space. That Reng Wus' Progenitor tumbled backwards. When he was touched by that purple light, he coughed up a mouthful of blood. Behind him, most of the Virtue Rooters' Progenitor instantly had most of his body disintegrate. As he was reduced to a bloody mess, his Nascent Divinity was separated from him, and with a loud scream, he retreated swiftly.

The three of his kind who were Almighty in Mastery Realm and who had followed behind the Reng Wus' Progenitor also looked as if their bodies were about to evaporate during that instant. They looked as if they were about to be destroyed and disappear. The Reng Wus' Progenitor pounced on them, and a large amount of blood fog erupted from his body with a bang before he swept them up and retreated ten thousand feet away. When he reappeared, he coughed up blood again. As for the other three, they were covered head to toe in wounds.

The four of them had clearly activated their full power to resist Zhu You Cai's attack, but they still could not fight against it. They had only managed to barely resist that attack after the Reng Wus' Progenitor had that blood fog erupt from him and after he infused some of that strange power from his race, but they were all still heavily injured.

As for the Virtue Rooters' Progenitor, he retreated swiftly and appeared thousands of feet away. Then, his entire body trembled before he was torn into shreds, and his body as well as his soul were destroyed!

With one strike, the sky and earth were shocked. This was the power of the War Immortal.

The three clones fighting against Zhu You Cai also disappeared instantly from before Zhu You Cai under the purple light from the Life Inequity Spear, as if they were dust that was blown away by the wind.

With a buzz, the Life Inequity Spear was held by Zhu You Cai. He stood in front of Su Ming and swept his spear sideways.

"I am here. Who dares to come forth?" Zhu You Cai asked flatly. His voice echoed in the area, causing the entire region to fall incredibly quiet during that instant.

"As expected of an Almighty in Life Realm!" The Reng Wus' Progenitor wiped off the blood at the corners of his lips. A surprised glint shone in his eyes. As he mumbled to himself, the four real masked people of happiness, anger, grief, and resentment from the fifth ocean had their eyes sparkle at the same time before they instantly took a step forward and charged to towards Zhu You Cai simultaneously.

"Happiness!" the person with the Mask of Happiness immediately spoke while he moved forward. His voice was ancient, but had a force akin to thunder roaring. As booming sounds shook the area, his mask instantly melted. As it melted, it started spreading out swiftly until it covered his entire body. Then, his body started abruptly twisting before he turned into a large runic symbol in the middle of space.

An ancient, prehistoric presence spread out from that runic symbol. If there was anyone who could understand the ancient alphabet, then they would be able to recognize that the meaning of the runic symbol was the source of all joy in the universe.

This was an ancient runic symbol that would cause all who saw it to be unable to help themselves but feel happiness immediately rise within the depths of their hearts!

When that runic symbol appeared, a thick wave of happiness surrounded the entire galaxy. As that presence spread out, a happy smile immediately appeared on the Flame Fiends' Progenitor, but the look in his eyes was clearly that of fear.

At the same time, those Reng Wus also came to a stop, and fear appeared on their faces. In fact, the three heavily injured Almighties in Mastery Realm all reacted in the same manner.

Only... three people did not react the same way.

One of them was Zhu You Cai. His expression remained the same and there was not a hint of change on him. The second was the Reng Wus' Progenitor. His expression was dark. The space around him distorted, a telling sign that he had activated the laws of fate's power to fight against the Runic Symbol of Happiness that hailed from a time long past.

The last... was Su Ming.

The gray-haired Su Ming was the master over all administrations regarding death. In his mind, which was dominated by complete rationality, not a single hint of emotion would appear. Even that Runic Symbol of Happiness from ancient times would find it difficult to fuse even a single bit into his heart.

He closed his eyes and still did not take any action towards everything happening around him.

However, at the instant the Runic Symbol of Happiness appeared, the person with the Mask of Anger immediately had his mask melt, and as it covered his entire body and twisted his figure, he turned swiftly into the second runic symbol.

This was the Runic Symbol of Anger!

When that runic symbol appeared, the presence in the galaxy was forcefully changed. Once it changed from happiness to anger, the emotions of the Flame Fiends' Progenitor changed and he coughed up a mouthful of blood. When he fell backwards, his entire body was filled with rage. However, this rage formed an indefinable, bizarre air when it was compared to the even greater fear in his eyes.

He was not the only one. The three Almighty in Mastery Realm from the Reng Wu Race and all the other Reng Wus were the same.

This change in their emotion was not due to their will, but was a forceful change in them brought by the power of the world, and it was the most damaging of all attacks.

At the same time, the third runic symbol appeared with a bang. At the instant the Runic Symbol of Grief appeared, the presence in the universe changed again. This time, almost at the moment the change occurred, the fourth runic symbol immediately appeared with a bang.

That was the Runic Symbol of Resentment. It caused the entire galaxy to immediately be filled with a strong resentment, and as it occurred, the Flame Fiends' Progenitor let out a shrill scream of pain. With a bang, his body tumbled backwards until he fell on a shattered rock not too far away from Su Ming. When blood trickled out of the corners of his mouth, confusion appeared in his eyes, and he looked as if he had lost consciousness. Occasionally, joy would appear on his face, and sometimes, it would be anger, and every now and then, it would be grief, and at other times, it would be resentment.

It was the same for the Reng Wus. In fact, even the Reng Wus' Progenitor was also shivering. The distortions around him were twisting and changing nonstop because he had exerted the powers of the laws of fate to their absolute limit.

However, slight changes had still appeared on his face. The corners of his lips curled up. That was the appearance of joy.

At that moment, it could be seen that mighty pressure from the full appearance of the Runic Symbols of Happiness, Anger, Grief, and Resentment in the area at that moment... had already surpassed that of an Almighty in Fate Realm!

At the same time, a grim expression that had never appeared before showed up on Zhu You Cai's face as he confronted the four runic symbols. He tightened his grip over the Life Inequity Spear, and the four runic symbols let out a loud bang to charge towards him. As they spun around continuously around him, the four of them turned into a spinning whirlwind.

As the whirlwind spun, those people dressed in black leather armor from the fifth ocean immediately sat down cross-legged, and their bodies instantly vanished into the fog within the fifth ocean.

When all of them disappeared and as the whirlwind spun even faster, a loud bang that surged into the heavens immediately rose in the fifth ocean. The entire fifth ocean started spinning during that instant to form a gigantic whirlpool that swept through the entire area with loud booming sounds. Its waves shook the entire universe.

At that moment, as the whirlpool rotated and as the fog in the ocean gathered together, a gigantic face immediately formed in the fifth ocean. There was a smile on that face, and when it rose up from the fifth ocean, it said one single word towards the cosmos, the universe, and the galaxy.

"Happiness!"

When this word appeared, a shocking bang immediately travelled out of the whirlwind that surrounded Zhu You Cai.

"Anger!" That voice appeared again.

"Grief!"

"Resentment!" At the instant that gigantic face formed of seawater said each word each time, its face would also change, and the whirlwind which surrounded Zhu You Cai would also let out a loud bang that shook the sky and earth.

Zhu You Cai's face while he was in the whirlwind was sullen but pale. As his entire body distorted, he lifted the Life Inequity Spear in his right hand and thrust it downwards swiftly.

"Impermanence... of Life and Death ."

As he mumbled these words, the long spear at his feet let out a loud bang, and black light erupted from it. This light swept through the entire area and crashed into the whirlwind as well as the four runic symbols. As the world roared, the whirlwind stopped spinning for a moment right under everyone's eyes before it swiftly disintegrated into its surroundings. The impact that stirred up swept through the fifth ocean, and as the whirlwind collapsed, a ray of black light shot out swiftly to turn into a long arc that charged towards the face in the fifth ocean.

Booming sounds rose again.

At the instant the face from the fifth ocean collided against the long spear, it was torn to shreds. At the same time, when the disintegrating whirlwind scattered in all directions, the four runic symbols were flung out and turned into four figures in the middle of space. They coughed up a mouthful of blood and raised their heads swiftly to look at Zhu You Cai coldly.

Zhu You Cai's face was pale as he stood in space. When blood trickled out of the corners of his mouth, he staggered and plunged to a shattered stone beside Su Ming. At the instant his body landed, he swiftly gained his footing, and when he lifted his right hand, black light shone in the fifth ocean before it returned to his hand to turn into the Life Inequity Spear. He stabbed it into the shattered stone to support himself so that he would not fall.

"Endless Cycles of Life!" A brilliant light shone in Zhu You Cai's eyes, and he lifted his left hand to swiftly point at the center of his brows.

However, at the instant the tip of his finger touched the center of his brows, the Reng Wus' Progenitor in the distance suddenly laughed loudly. He had been waiting for a long time, and this Almighty in Life Realm had finally executed the Endless Cycles of Life Art.

At the instant his laughter echoed in space, an ordinary looking Reng Wu behind him immediately lifted his head swiftly and took a step towards Zhu You Cai. He was so quick that he moved like a flash of lightning. When he moved over, his body withered swiftly, and he became so emaciated that he looked like a skeleton in the span of a breath. At the instant he appeared beside Zhu You Cai, his body immediately turned into powder under this speed.

However, that powder turned into a huge hand that seized Zhu You Cai's head. A power... that surpassed Life Realm also spread out from that hand, and it was... the power of Death Realm!

1. Impermanence of Life and Death: Impermanence itself is related to one of the three existences in Buddhism, and it is also known as Anicca or Anitya. The basic gist here is that life and death is unpredictable.

Chapter 1029: Try It

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Zhu You Cai's expression changed. He could not dodge it in time. At that moment, a freezing glare shone in his eyes, and he did not bother to dodge it at all. Instead, he

closed his eyes, and his power erupted from his body to collide against the incoming hand with brute force.

As a loud bang rang in space, that hand trembled. Zhu You Cai coughed up blood, and his body fell back like a kite with its string snapped. He crashed into a rock in the distance with a loud bang, and his body withered swiftly. In an instant, his plump body was reduced to only skin and bones.

All of his life force seemed to have been taken away by the hand. At that moment, it shone with a gentle light, and flesh as well as blood grew swiftly on it.

“Such a powerful Endless Cycles of Life... This nourishment is a small supplement for me.” As a hoarse voice echoed in space, a freezing glare shone in Zhu You Cai’s eyes.

“Dao of Longevity. With a thought, I can continue living, and with a thought, I can... cause an explosion!”

When those words were spoken, the old voice that had been echoing in space fell into abrupt silence. At the same time, the hand formed by powder shuddered, and the flesh as well as blood growing out on it fell apart with simultaneous explosions.

“Dao of Life Inequity! You’re connected to Hong Yue! You’re his disciple!”

At the instant the voice spoke, Zhu You Cai’s body trembled fiercely. He swiftly opened his eyes wide and glared at the crumbling hand. Echoing in his ears were the three words the ancient voice had spoken just then—Dao of Life Inequity!

What he executed was the Art within the Dao of Longevity his Master Hong Yue had taught him. As for Life Inequity, his pain had turned into the thoughts in his heart after he lost his lover. Yet that strange existence within the Reng Wu Race said that the Art was the Dao of Life Inequity. The impact of that sunk Zhu You Cai into a state of bewilderment. In the mid of it there was also deep fear... as well as his memories towards his Master’s actions in the past.

“Kill him! We must absolutely not let this person remain alive! All those who practice the Dao of Life Inequity must be killed! They must all be killed! They have to be killed!”

A crazed voice spread out through space, and a large amount of black smoke came out of the hand before it fell back and disappeared into space. At the same time, the current Progenitor of the Reng Wu Race charged towards Zhu You Cai.

Zhu You Cai trembled, bemusement in his eyes.

Flame Fiends’ Progenitor was on a shattered stone in the distance, and his facial color was dull and without luster. He was already severely wounded.

At the moment Reng Wus' Progenitor closed in, the gray-haired Su Ming, who had been sitting and meditating all the while through the six months without moving, opened his eyes.

At the instant he did so, the Life Inequity Spear let out a buzz and turned into a black light that charged towards him. Once Su Ming got up and seized it, he took a step towards Reng Wus' Progenitor and thrust the spear forward.

"You overestimate yourself!"

Reng Wus' Progenitor laughed coldly and lifted his right hand to swing it towards the incoming long spear. To him, if Zhu You Cai held that spear, it could make him tremble, but when it was that gray-haired person's hands, it was not better than a useless piece of trash. If he swung his hand, he could reduce it to ashes.

Without Zhu You Cai, the boy who obtained the fifth stone was just useless garbage, so weak that he could not even withstand a single blow!

Reng Wus' Progenitor's confidence was incredibly great, but the instant his hand touched Su Ming's Life Inequity Spear, he trembled. A vast amount of energy that astonished him erupted from the Life Inequity Spear. A layer of sand spread out from within it, and it turned into a palm made of sand in front of Reng Wus' Progenitor. With a bang, it pressed on the center of his brows.

A life-threatening sense of danger rose within the heart of the Reng Wus' Progenitor in an instant. His pupils shrank, and full of fear, his body tumbled backwards. At the same time, he let out a shrill call in the depths of his heart.

"Spirit of our ancestors, please protect me!"

As a rumbling rose into space, the palm made of sand touched Reng Wus' Progenitor, and his body was torn to shreds with a bang. All of his laws of fate could not bring forth any form of resistance under that palm. This was a difference in Realm. The suppression formed by that difference was a destruction that Reng Wus' Progenitor could not hope to stand against.

His body fell apart. Even when he was reduced to flesh and blood and scattered through the area, the spirit of his ancestors did not descend to protect him, because the hand that had been formed by the powder just then was the spirit of Reng Wus' ancestors.

The legacy spirit formed by generations of ancestors might be powerful, but there was a fatal defect in it. That defect was just a guess among the four Great True Worlds, and they did not know about the details... but the four guardians of the fifth ocean did know of it.

Hence, Dust Burners' Progenitor also knew about it, and Su Ming knew everything that had been carved into the jade slip.

The defect was that it was at its strongest when it was in the territory that belonged to its race, and it was at its weakest when it was outside the area. That's why the spirit of Reng Wus' ancestors seldom ventured out. Unless... there was something that forced them to go out.

The fifth stone which released a ripple of power so incredibly great that it was unprecedented and surpassed all that came before it was one such thing. Yet even so, it only tempted the spirit. It was still highly impossible for it to personally venture out.

Unless... an Almighty in Life Realm was added into the mix!

The fatal defect lay in the spirit of Reng Wus' ancestors losing plenty of their basic functions in the stillness of the endless passage of time until only the most basic will and the deepest memories remained. That was why the spirit would need to replenish its life force once in a while, and the best replenishment was to devour an Almighty in Life Realm.

While it was not that Almighties in Life Realm did not exist in Divine Essence Star Ocean, most of them had long disappeared, and those that did not disappear were like the Progenitor of Sand Earthlings. They had chosen to fall into silence. Forcefully devouring them would not bring about great effect. Instead, it would just pollute one's power in Kalpa Realm.

What the spirit needed was an Almighty in Life Realm who had exuberant life force. However, it could not go into the world beyond Divine Essence Star Ocean. After all, its foundation lay among the Reng Wu Race.

Which was why when Zhu You Cai showed off the power of Life Realm, the spirit of Reng Wus' ancestor immediately became greedy with what little remained of its intelligence, and it... came to the fifth ocean.

"I fulfilled the end of my promise with you. It is your turn to do what you promised me."

Zhu You Cai closed his eyes. When he reopened them, he had already buried the bewilderment deep in his heart. He struggled to stand up from the shattered stone and look towards Su Ming.

"Did you notice a long time ago?" Su Ming looked back at him.

"I didn't at the start. But everything that happened later allowed me to notice some hints. You used me as a bait to lure out that person just then. I believe this is your promise with the four people from the fifth ocean."

When Zhu You Cai said that, the expression of Flame Fiends' Progenitor recovered, though his face was still pale. When he looked at Su Ming, the gray-haired man gave him a feeling that his cunning was unfathomable, and it terrified him.

"I am an Abyss Builder." Su Ming cast Zhu You Cai a glance and sent a thought to him.

Once these words were passed over, a brilliant light shone in Zhu You Cai's eyes. After a long time had passed, he nodded.

Su Ming turned around and looked at the fifth ocean. The four masked people floating in space had aloof expressions. Su Ming brought his right hand up and patted his storage bag. Immediately, a jade slip appeared on his palm, and he flung it towards the four people before speaking,

"I'll return this to you now." The jade slip was what Dust Burners' Progenitor had given to Su Ming in the past. He once said that the person with the jade slip could open the path to the fifth True World without being interrupted.

The person with the Mask of Happiness lifted his right hand and seized the air. Immediately, the jade slip charged towards him. Once he held it in his palm, he tightened his grip around it slightly. Immediately, the jade slip turned into ashes.

"Offering," the person with the Mask of Happiness said faintly.

"Thousands of Virtue Rooters, nearly a thousand of the ferocious beasts, several Almightyies, and..." As Su Ming listed it all calmly, shrill screams of pain rose behind him. The sand behind him swept past, and as violent gusts of wind howled, the powerful existence that was the Sand Spirit destroyed Reng Wus while sweeping through the area with ease.

Even the three heavily injured Almightyies from the Reng Wu Race could not escape from the predicament.

As the shrill and forlorn voices echoed in space, the gray-haired Su Ming continued speaking.

"... along with thousands of Reng Wus, three Almightyies in Mastery Realm, one Almighty in Fate Realm, and the injured spirit of the race's ancestors. This is the offering."

The four people with the Masks of Happiness, Anger, Grief, and Resentment were silent. After a moment, they swung their arms, and countless dark glowing spots appeared in the previous battlefield beyond the fifth ocean. Within them were soul fragments, and they... were all the people who had died there moments ago.

They had dazed expressions on their faces while floating towards the fifth ocean. Once they fused with it, the fifth ocean tumbled about and spread out by almost ten thousand feet before becoming silent again.

The four turned around at that moment. Just as they were about to disappear and return to the depths of the fifth ocean to continue fulfilling their mission in protecting it, Su Ming suddenly spoke again.

"I request that you cut down the time and reduce the remaining half a year to one day!" When he spoke, the four people who were about to disappear came to an abrupt halt.

"Offering!" the voice from the person with the Mask of Happiness said again.

Su Ming's long gray hair changed at that instant. It turned crimson in the span of a breath, and a madness that screamed of destruction appeared in his eyes. He raised his right hand and pointed at the galaxy. It began to roar. The whole fifth ocean tumbled once again. At the same time, a sea of fire appeared out of nowhere in the galaxy. As it tumbled about and spread out, the illusory outline of the fifth kiln formed in the distance.

"Why don't the four of you try requesting for an offering again?" The red-haired Su Ming had a domineering tone in his voice. His expression showed that he was looking down on the entire world, and the aura he exuded shook the entire galaxy.

When he was gray, he obeyed absolute rationality. He would do things to pay the smallest price for the greatest rewards. That was his principle. However... the red Su Ming was a person of arrogance, imperiousness, madness, and destruction. While he was in that state, there were no reason or principles before him. There was... only killing intent that could be triggered at any moment.

With the possession of the fifth kiln, he was an existence that would cause even Zhu You Cai's pupils to shrink. He was... the strongest person in Divine Essence Star Ocean at that moment!

Chapter 1030 The Exact Same

Su Ming's voice had a strong domineering tone in it. That domineering will was filled with madness and destruction, and there was not a hint of rationality in it. There was only... a madness that screamed, "If you go against me, then I will kill you."

His voice reverberated in space. The four masked people in the fifth ocean stopped moving. They turned around slowly and their gazes instantly fell on the red-haired Su Ming.

"As you wish." After a moment, the person with the Mask of Happiness among the four people spoke hoarsely. He raised his right hand and swung his arm. The three people beside him immediately acted the same.

Wind immediately stirred and clouds surged in the fifth ocean. As the world rumbled, it looked as if a wave was rushing to the heavens. It instantly devoured the four of them, and the galaxy above the tumbling fifth ocean had a piercing, brilliant light appear swiftly.

At first sight, this light was a glowing spot. Almost at the instant this glowing spot appeared, from the end of the pillar of light that shot out from the depths of the fifth ocean came another pillar of light, which shot out of the fifth ocean. It charged towards the glowing spot above it and swiftly connected with it. The light from the glowing spot grew bigger, and the third pillar of light shot out from within it, and its direction... was the fifth stone beside Su Ming!

If that pillar of light was connected to the fifth stone, then there would be three pillars of light that existed in the fifth stone. They were connected together and formed a triangle!

The triangle was like a Rune. It would open the path to the fifth True World and send the person in possession of the fifth stone to the fifth True World.

The flow of time seemed as if it had become faster during that instant. A day later, the pillar of light in the sky let out a bang and shot through the endless space before it finally descended at the edge of the fifth ocean. It descended beside Su Ming, on the fifth stone that was shining in the same light.

At the instant the pillar of light crashed into the fifth stone, the Rune which took the form of a triangle on the fifth ocean appeared swiftly. As it did so, booming sounds echoed in all directions. Those loud bangs were deafening to the ears and stirred up the fifth ocean, making it turn into a gigantic whirlpool that began swiftly rotating under that bang.

As it rotated, the originally vertical triangle formed by the pillars of light in this place slowly inclined, as if it was about to be laid flat in space. As it was laid down, a power of Relocation erupted from the fifth stone beside Su Ming. The appearance of this power of Relocation instantly caused the universe to tremble, causing the galaxy to look as if it was about to be torn apart.

During that moment, if anyone looked from the highest spot in the universe, the first thing they would notice would be the whirlpool formed by the fifth ocean. The shape of the whirlpool was round, but within that circle was a triangle!

That triangle was... the complete Rune that was formed once the three pillars of light were laid flat, and it looked as if it was set in the circular whirlpool!

And the spot where Su Ming stood was one of the corners of the triangle. This galaxy was covered in a powerful light at that moment. Under that light, booming sounds surged into the heavens... and the power of Relocation was swiftly activated.

The path of the fifth True World was opened as the Relocation Rune was activated!

Bang!

A power that was great enough to make even the Almighty in Life Realm apprehensive erupted swiftly from the Rune. When it rushed into the heavens, it could be seen that the light that rushed out was also in the shape of a triangle as it charged towards the void in the galaxy.

Su Ming was contained in one of the corners of that triangle. As the power of Relocation rushed out, his body was instantly swept into the Rune and was pushed into the endless void with the pillars of light.

Booming sounds shook the sky and earth. The pillars of light continued pushing forward and looked as if they had turned into pillars that were used to push up the galaxy above them and support it once it was torn apart.

At the instant the three pillars of light forming the triangle appeared, almost all the living beings in Divine Essence Star Ocean could see it.

The statue of the first God of Berserkers, Lie Shan Xiu, had its head risen to stare at the sky while it stood on a cliff in a mountain within Black Ink Planet. No one knew whether it was just a coincidence, but the spot where it was staring at was coincidentally the pillars of light that surged into the heavens and led to the fifth True World, which could be seen even from this place.

Lie Shan Xiu's statue looked as if it was deep in thought. The meaning Su Ming had deciphered previously was the other message he wished to convey. If he could stand at this spot to look at this scene at that moment, then he would discover in shock that the understanding he gained in the past... was not wrong... but he missed the deepest message Lie Shan Xiu hid in it!

Within Divine Essence Star Ocean was the spot where Ninth Tribe was previously located. It was also the place where Tian Xie Zi had lived for a long time. At that moment, it had turned into wasteland. The statue of Tian Xie Zi built into the wasteland was... also coincidentally staring into the direction where the pillars of light had risen.

His gaze... also contained a message that Su Ming had deciphered incorrectly in the past. However, if he saw it with his own eyes at that moment, his heart would definitely tremble as well.

The pillars of light lasted for about three months. Within those three months, the pillars of light attracted too many people's gazes. Some of them did not understand what it was, but some of them did.

Time passed. One year... and yet another year...

The Flame Fiends' Progenitor waited beyond the fifth ocean and stared with eager eyes at the fifth ocean, which had long since become calm once more. He stared at the space where the pillars of light had disappeared, and vaguely, he seemed to still be able to see... Su Ming's figure in the past.

When the tenth year arrived, the Flame Fiends' Progenitor sighed and chose to leave. Even if Su Ming had yet to release the seal in his body, all of this was no longer important to the Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

He slightly reluctant to part with Su Ming just like that. It was as if that thought had risen in him while they were acquainted with each other through the series of events that happened between them. His animosity towards Su Ming had turned into wariness before it changed into a strange form of trust, and right then, it had turned into a form of nostalgia.

With that nostalgia in him, he left the fifth ocean and moved through the galaxy to return to his homeland, and in that burning planet, he continued... to be the Progenitor his people worshipped.

However, when it was night and it was quiet, he would also lift his head to look at the dazzling, starry sky, and all the things that happened during the period of time when he was in the fifth kiln and the edge of the fifth ocean would appear in his head.

'He will come back.' The Flame Fiends' Progenitor closed his eyes. His body blended with the lava before he turned back into a statue and fell into deep sleep, remaining still and unmoving.

On the 72nd year after the Flame Fiends' Progenitor left, Zhu You Cai also chose to leave the edge of the fifth ocean. Even though Su Ming still had yet to tell him how to resurrect his wife, Su Ming's declaration that he was an Abyss Builder had already given Zhu You Cai endless hope.

Even though... during the past seventy something years, he fell into deep thought pondering over his Master's Dao of Longevity and the Dao of Life Inequity he declared for himself in the midst of his confusion and wondered about their similarities and differences. Even though these thoughts caused his heart to ache in more pain and caused him to be increasingly agitated, he still persistently believed... that Su Ming would return!

When he returned, he would tell Zhu You Cai... how to resurrect his wife.

With that persistence in him, Zhu You Cai left quietly and returned to the mountain to rest in his cave. Beside his ears were the woman's faint hums coming indistinctly from the summit. He closed his eyes, tears fell, and in his hand he always held... a medicinal core.

One hundred years passed in Divine Essence Star Ocean. Everything had long since regained their original peace. Many people no longer paid any attention to the scene from one hundred years ago. The eternity in the sun, moon, and stars, as well as the change in the state of affairs for all things was always a continuous dream. After one of it happened, another would arrive.

However, there were some people who would always remember that one hundred years ago, a cultivator stirred up... a storm that caused Divine Essence Star Ocean to tremble within this galaxy.

Xu Hui had long since reunited with the nine old Frail Darknesses. She sat on the warship, and with the three thousand fearless warriors and all the people from Morning Dao Sect who belonged to Dao Kong, she left Divine Essence Star Ocean and returned to the region in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence where the forces of power from True Morning Dao World were stationed. Over there, she waited quietly for the day of Su Ming's return.

Xuan Shang was still struggling in the fifth kiln and did not have a way out.

Dijiu Mo Sha was still expanding his tribe and continuously fighting against the other races all for the sake of finding a place for his tribe where they would stay permanently.

Everything went on their course. Without Su Ming, Divine Essence Star Ocean continued as it did in the past. This gigantic galaxy would never tilt because of a single person's will, and neither would anything change because a person was missing from the galaxy.

The past glories, the rise to power that seemed to go against the laws of heavens, the endless disasters were like fleeting clouds. Perhaps they would be remembered, but perhaps they would also be forgotten. Compared to this eternal galaxy, these tiny, insignificant lives were still as tiny and as insignificant as ever...

However, the legends regarding Su Ming were slowly remembered by plenty of people, since he did not leave behind his life. They remembered that there was once a period of time where a person had talents that shone brilliantly for thousands of feet in Divine Essence Star Ocean, but had appeared only briefly like a queen of the night.

From the barren lands to Western Ring Nebula, then from the foreign lands to Black Ink Planet, before he moved from Divine Essence Star Ocean to the kiln, and from Divine Essence Star Ocean to the fifth kiln... Wherever Su Ming went to, he took away his shadow and left behind... his legend.

.....

When Su Ming woke up, he saw a dazzling universe. This universe was incredibly unfamiliar to him, and it did not belong to Divine Essence Star Ocean.

This place was filled with dead silence. There was not a single sound in the place, and it was so quiet that it gave off a terrifying feeling. When he looked at it from the distance, the galaxy was not empty. There were plenty of shattered stones floating in it, and it was a dishevelled mess, making it seem as if war had wreaked havoc in this place for an eternity and left behind the wreckages caused by the war.

All of this was the exact same as the image of the fifth kiln Su Ming projected in his mind based on the analysis he made from other people's words.

All of this was also... the exact same as the appearance he believed the fifth True World should take based on his speculations in his mind.

There were no discrepancies, no differences. It was as if Su Ming had come here before. At first glance, it was unfamiliar, but when he glanced at it again, it was familiar.

This familiarity came from the effect of the image of the fifth True World in his mind. It was like someone imagining their future lover in their minds, and when they truly saw that person, he would realize... that she or he was exactly as they imagined.

Su Ming fell silent. As he stared at the fifth True World before his eyes, a glint appeared in his eyes and he charged into the distance. When he lifted his right hand, a jade slip appeared on his palm.

Chapter 1031 A Wasteland

The jade slip was what Dust Burners' Progenitor had given to Su Ming in the past. Marked on it were certain regions of the Fifth True World. Su Ming memorized the contents, and as he moved forward, he saw a white river several days later.

'The Fifth Abyss River...'

Su Ming's footsteps came to a halt and he looked at the Abyss River that seemed to cut apart the galaxy. He also saw two... gigantic voids at the two distant ends of the river.

He had no idea where those two gigantic voids went. They existed in the galaxy, and the white Abyss River flowed between them, making those two voids look like two eyes with empty gazes.

When Su Ming read the jade slip with the Fifth True World's map he'd gotten from Dust Burners' Progenitor, he saw the Fifth Abyss River carved on it. It was just a simple carving, but its head was white.

That was because white symbolized the abyss. It did not mean death, but was the manifestation of an idea. Right then, Su Ming saw the Fifth Abyss River.

He realized that the river was the exact same as what he had imagined in his head. The two voids that looked like eyes and connected the two ends also fit with Su Ming's imagination.

"On one end is a planet called Burning Dust..." Su Ming mumbled. It was on the carved map within the jade slip. When he raised his head, he headed for the Fifth Abyss River.

The closer he went, the thicker the aura of death became. Su Ming saw corpses drifting about in the Fifth Abyss River, and when he left, he suddenly stopped before turning his head around to look back.

He had a vague feeling that something was off, but he was momentarily unable to figure out just what gave him that feeling. In silence, Su Ming said softly, "Baldy..."

He was calling out to the bald crane in his storage bag, but he obtained no answer. When he frowned, he fused his Atman into his storage bag and saw... that the bald crane was not in there.

A glint shone in Su Ming's eyes, and the feeling that something was off became stronger.

After remaining silent for a moment, he chose to leave.

When he left, the numerous corpses in the Fifth Abyss River continued drifting about. However... all them looked as if they were lying face down in the river. One could only see their backs, but not their faces.

Su Ming walked through the galaxy. He had no idea how much time had passed. He seemed to have forgotten about the passage of time while he traveled through the Fifth True World. He just continued walking until he saw a planet in the distant galaxy.

It was a burning planet. Thick waves of fire spread from it, enveloping it in a sea of fire.

That planet was the origin of Fire Spirits which Dust Burners' Progenitor had spoken about.

Su Ming stared at the planet, and the feeling that something was off became stronger in his heart, but he still could not find what in particular gave him that feeling. His heart was on guard, but even so... he still could not discover any form of threat.

From the moment he stepped into that place to the moment he saw the planet, he was the only person in the galaxy. He did not see another living being.

Su Ming was silent. With hesitation, he walked towards Burning Dust Planet. He walked past the sea of fire, and when he stepped on the planet, he spread out his Atman, but he still did not find any signs of life.

The ground was a desert, a plain of sand burning in a sea of fire. The sky was crimson red and filled with flames. There were no... rivers or trees in the planet. The only thing there was sand.

Su Ming grabbed a burning lump of earth and put it into his storage bag. He cast a scrutinizing glance at Burning Dust Planet again before turning around quietly and leaving.

He walked absentmindedly within the Fifth True World, which was completely devoid of life. He was the only person in the whole world and the entire universe. The silence around him gradually turned suffocating, which gave Su Ming a feeling as if there was a depression in him that he could not vent out.

However, he also felt that everything was as it should be. The Fifth True World was supposed to be an existence void of life. It was a dead universe. The destruction here, the wastelands, and everything else were the exact same as he had imagined. There was nothing different...

Time passed year by year, with Su Ming continuing to charge forward through the galaxy. He only had one goal—a planet marked on the map that was located far in the distance.

A planet called Abyss Vessel.

It was Abyss Builders' homeland and also his race's holy land. In the past, Abyss Builders' Progenitor lived over there.

Time passed quietly, without notice. Then one day, when Su Ming felt that he should be near the planet, he saw an aquamarine blue cultivation planet ahead of himself.

That color was incredibly unique in the galaxy, making it hard to forget after seeing it once.

'Abyss Vessel Planet...'

When Su Ming saw the blue planet, his body trembled. In silence, he walked closer to it. When he came onto the planet, stepped into its atmosphere, he saw that it was a wasteland.

Only the azure blue shade of the seawater moved about as waves formed on the water's surface. It was all silent, and even the sound of the waves seemed to be completely cut off.

There was wreckage all over the ground. Shattered rocks were everywhere, and Su Ming could vaguely see an image of numerous cities, but all of them had been reduced to ruins.

There were no mountains that were too tall. All of them were broken, as if they were the proofs that a war that shook the entire Fifth True World had happened there in the past.

While in midair, Su Ming stared at the ground and the wreckage on it. He walked down in silence, then went past the ruins of numerous cities until he reached the center of the planet. He saw an island in an ocean there, and on it was a gigantic palace, most of whose structure had collapsed.

Once, there had been plenty of statues standing tall at the square in front of it, but there were only three of them left.

Two were headless. Clearly, they had been shattered during the war in the past. Only one statue was still complete, and it portrayed a woman.

Su Ming stared at it, for it was his mother, the woman who was currently lying in the coffin within the fifth kiln and absorbing life force to preserve her life. It was her statue.

Based on the statues' positions, one of the headless two stood at the center. It should have belonged to the most important person. He might not have a head anymore, but Su Ming could tell that it should have been of Abyss Builders' Progenitor.

By his side was Su Ming's mother, so on his other side...

With a complicated gaze, Su Ming looked at the other headless statue, and his appearance was just as indistinct and vague as in his imagination...

Su Ming remained silent for a long time before turning around and walking through practically the entire Abyss Builders' planet. Several days later, when he returned back, he sat down cross-legged in front of his mother's statue. He just sat there quietly and stared at the statue before he looking at his surroundings and sinking into a pensive silence.

Time slowly passed by him. One year, two years... five years... ten years...

Su Ming still sat there without moving. However, as time passed, a brilliant dark light gathered in his eyes, and he gradually closed them.

In the core of Divine Essence Star Ocean was the fifth ocean, and the deepest part of it was a place the world outside could not see. The sea of fog there tumbled about, surrounding a gigantic altar.

On the altar there was a huge mirror made of aquamarine blue. It was crystal clear and exuded a powerful, mighty pressure. It spread out as if it was suppressing the entire fifth ocean and forced the sea of fog tumbling about to quiet down when it reached a certain point.

At that moment, the four people with the Masks of Happiness, Anger, Grief, and Resentment were sitting cross-legged around the huge mirror. They did not close their eyes but were staring at the crystal-like surface before them.

After a long while, the person with the Mask of Grief lowered his head and sighed softly. There was no longer cold detachment within his eyes, but a complicated look.

As he sighed, the person with the Mask of Anger turned his head towards him before asking in a low voice, "Can take it anymore?" There was a magnificence to that voice, along with a domineering air that made him seem as if he was looking down at the universe.

"I am indeed unable to bear with it any longer, but you are the same." When the person with the Mask of Grief said those words flatly, he cast a glance at the person with the Mask of Anger.

That person lowered his head in silence. After a long while, he let out a long sigh and mumbled under his breath, "Perhaps I made a mistake in the past."

"From the moment we gave up on our identities from the Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos and became the guardians of Dark Dawn Ocean, we drew a line between ourselves and our pasts. We cut off all ties with all the emotions we had in the past.

"This is just the first test by Dark Dawn Ocean. If he can't even see through the test in this place, then he is not a person needed by the 180 Expanse Cosmoses in Dark Dawn," a low voice said, coming from the person with the Mask of Happiness.

"You once mentioned that besides the four great legacies of happiness, anger, grief, and resentment, there is in truth still another legacy. There should be five guardians in Dark Dawn Ocean. Who is the fifth person?" a hoarse voice asked faintly and abruptly, coming from the person next to the Mask of Anger who had not yet spoken before.

"Happiness, Anger, Grief, Resentment, and Cessation. The fifth legacy has absolutely no emotions within it. It is the Mask of Cessation that disperses all seven emotions and six desires," the person with the Mask of Happiness said flatly.

"I have a question. The three of us have had many scions, but you once said that there is only one generation for the legacy of happiness. I'm very curious. Just... who were you when you were in Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos?" the person with the Mask of Grief immediately asked.

"When it will be time for the three of you to know, you will naturally know," the person with the Mask of Happiness said calmly.

The people with the Masks of Anger, Grief, and Resentment fell silent when they heard it, but they still looked at the person with the Mask of Happiness with curiosity.

At that moment, the crystal mirror around they sat suddenly became muddled. As clouds and fog surrounded it, it looked like there was wind stirring up and clouds surging around them. Buzzing sounds reverberated in the area, and the people with Masks of Anger, Grief, and Resentment immediately looked over. Only the person with the Mask of Happiness remained as aloof as ever.

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1032 Mask of Cessation - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1032 Mask of Cessation

Chapter 1032 Mask of Cessation

At the instant the three of them looked towards the crystal mirror, Su Ming, who had been sitting and meditating for nearly a century on the Abyss Vessel Planet in the fifth True World, opened his eyes.

His gaze was calm. When he looked at his mother's statue, Su Ming sighed softly.

'I only managed to see my mother's statue here because I saw my mother before... I never met Su Xuan Yi, that's why his statue is headless. I never met the Abyss Builders' Progenitor either, that's why... his statue is also headless.' Su Ming stood up and looked towards the entire Abyss Vessel Planet.

"The planet is the exact same as I imagined..."

"This true world is also the same as I imagined..." Su Ming shook his head. He took a step towards the air, and within an instant, he appeared in the galaxy.

"That year, I imagined that the planet was near, and then Abyss Vessel Planet appeared. Now, I will have this thought: The fifth Abyss River is in front of me..." Su Ming mumbled. He lowered his head, and when he lifted his head again, the fifth Abyss River appeared in front of him.

He saw the corpses in the river. All of them only had their backs revealed before him. Their faces were not shown.

'This is also because I have never met you, that's why I can't imagine different appearances for all of you.'

Su Ming shook his head, then walked towards the galaxy.

'I might not want to believe it, but during the past hundred years, I already guessed at the moment I saw the statue... this isn't the fifth True World. There is no Abyss Vessel Planet here.'

"The real fifth True World isn't here as well. What a lie, what an outrageous lie!" A fierce glare appeared in Su Ming's eyes.

At the instant Su Ming spoke, the universe around him suddenly trembled. All the shattered stones in it vanished. All the air around him swiftly distorted and turned into an arc.

This arc was formed after the entire galaxy was distorted. As it slowly spun in front of Su Ming, it turned to face him, and when it did, its appearance caused Su Ming's heart to shake.

Because he saw... a gigantic mask appear in front of him once the galaxy distorted!

The white Abyss River was a line between the eyes on the mask, and the two voids at the two ends of the Abyss River which looked like eyes to him in the past... were now the blank eyes on the mask.

Su Ming would never forget that mask. That mask... was the one forced on him when he was in Yin Death Region. The mask that cut off all seven emotions and six desires within him... the Mask of Cessation!!

Due to this mask, Su Ming came to Divine Essence Star Ocean. Now, more than one thousand years later, he saw the mask again, and understanding rose swiftly in Su Ming's heart.

'That so-called searching for your king you told me in the past and the rumors in the worlds outside about the fifth True World's entrance being located here is a lie! You didn't just lie to me, you also... lied to the first God of Berserkers, Lie Shan Xiu!!' A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes. At that moment, he had come to completely understand everything.

'This is a legacy... A legacy that is similar to that of the four guardians with the masks in the fifth ocean. If my guess is correct, then there should not be originally four masked people here, but five!

'And after happiness, anger, grief, and resentment comes the Mask of Cessation that cuts off the seven emotions and six desires. At the moment you made me wear the mask to come to Divine Essence Star Ocean, you didn't want me to search for your king or search for the entrance to the fifth True World. You wanted to make me the fifth guardian in this place!!

'I now understand the complicated emotions and the confusion on Lie Shan Xiu's statue in the past as well... because at that time, he might have already noticed the hints... but in the end, he still stepped into your fraud.

'One of the four masked people... is Lie Shan Xiu!!' A brilliant light shone swiftly in Su Ming's eyes. At that moment, his understanding caused his mind to suddenly be clear.

Su Ming's heart trembled, because he remembered his Master, Tian Xie Zi, and he was almost certain that if Tian Xie Zi was still alive, then one of the four masked people... was Tian Xie Zi!!

It did not matter whether it was Lie Shan Xiu, Tian Xie Zi, or Su Ming. The three of them all had one similarity, and that was... the three of them... came from Yin Death Region!

When he looked at it this way, Su Ming's heart was in shock again. Who... exactly was the third and fourth person among the four?!

"Wear the mask and become the fifth guardian of Dark Dawn Ocean. Envoy of Cessation... you will know everything that you wish to know. You will know all the secrets regarding Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos, the fifth True World, and the Abyss Builders.

"Become the Envoy of Cessation and you will never have any worries as well as uncertainties... and you will be given eternal life as well!!

"This is your life. You cannot fight back against it. From the moment you wore the mask and was sent into Divine Essence Star Ocean, your path in your life has already been decided. No matter how hard you try to change it, you cannot escape from it... Your fate is to become the bearer of the Mask of Cessation in Dark Dawn Ocean!" An ancient voice with a cold detachment and a supreme mighty pressure tumbled out in roaring waves from the mouth of the gigantic galactical mask.

There was in no way Su Ming would forget that voice. That voice belonged to the ancient will from Yin Death Region, the one that had threatened him with his senior brothers' lives and forced him to wear the mask!!

"You are unable to refuse, you cannot refuse... and neither do you have the right to refuse. You are chosen... to become my Envoy of Cessation!" That voice echoed and shook space. The mask formed by the gigantic galaxy rushed forward swiftly to cover Su Ming with a loud bang.

A powerful, mighty pressure gathered swiftly on Su Ming's body, causing Su Ming to instantly be unable to move even a single inch. However, at the instant that mighty pressure descended on him and Su Ming felt that he could not move... a power that swiftly allowed him to regain his mobility travelled out rapidly from his cultivation base clone—Dao Kong's original body.

Or rather, this was not a power. It was an aura!

That aura was long-lasting and similarly brought with it a supreme will that crashed head-on against the incoming mask with a bang.

Su Ming could sense that aura. That was... an aura from True Morning Dao World. That was... the power of kismet! That was the kismet from the entire True Morning Dao World, and it was forcibly interfering with everything, because Dao Kong's body was something loved dearly by True Morning Dao World's kismet, and now, it was clear that there was a power from a world beyond clashing fiercely against that kismet.

"Su Xuan Yi, even if you have already calculated all of this and specifically delivered a physical body so that this child will possess kismet, I have also long since predicted this. There is no way I will let you succeed!" As the mask charged forward, that ancient and cold voice echoed in the air with a loud bang.

At the instant the voice echoed in the air, that gigantic mask instantly turned around and had its back facing Su Ming. Countless white threads also crawled out swiftly from within it. As they squirmed around, they spread out, making them look incredibly terrifying, and during that time, those white threads intersected with each other to form a gigantic face.

That face was ancient, and its expression was numb. It looked like a piece of human skin, and it was filled with those white threads from within. At the same time it rushed towards Su Ming, it immediately crashed into that invisible kismet.

When booming sounds echoed in the air, that ancient voice from the mask spread out again.

"To deal with that kismet from True Morning Dao World, I've been preparing for tens upon thousands of years and gathered together the Face of Misfortune from True Morning Dao World to break the kismet you brought to this place. Now, scatter!"

When he said these words, booming sounds shook the universe and made the space in all directions tremble. The kismet from True Morning Dao World gathered on Su Ming's cultivation base clone immediately tumbled backwards in the midst of those booming sounds and collapsed.

Without the kismet from True Morning Dao World, that face where the interior was filled with thin threads also spread out to turn into countless squirming thin threads again. At

the instant it charged towards Su Ming, the mask in the galaxy shrank swiftly, but at the moment it closed in on Su Ming, Ecang's presence erupted swiftly with a bang from Su Ming's body, and Ecang's body appeared behind him.

"Puny little Ecang, if you were at the peak of your strength, you would still have some abilities that would pose as a threat. After all, you were one of the lives in Old Man Extermination's ballad... but for your current self, shatter!" That cold voice echoed in space again. With a bang, Su Ming's entire body was covered in blood. The Ecang behind him was swiftly torn to shreds before it crumbled.

"This is your fate, the fate you cannot avoid. You... are my Envoy of Cessation!" The cold voice was emotionally wrought up, and the mask formed by the galaxy continuously shrank before it turned into a normal size. It instantly covered Su Ming's face and countless white threads crawled swiftly into Su Ming's skin and flesh in a frenzied pace. They connected tightly with his flesh and blood, intending to forcefully make Su Ming wear the mask again.

"From now on, you will no longer have a name. You will only have one title... Cessation!" As the old man's voice echoed in space, Su Ming's entire body shuddered. The mask covered his face, and intense pain rose in his entire body. At that moment, madness appeared in his eyes.

'Black stone fragment, Seed of Life Extermination, take off this mask for me, find its flaw!' When Su Ming roared in his heart, the Seed of Life Extermination in his soul shone swiftly with a powerful light. Once that light spread out rapidly from Su Ming's soul, it shot out of his body and erupted quickly from within him.

That light was made of an intersection of nine colors. When Su Ming's body was enveloped in that light, it was as if another figure had appeared faintly on his body. That was an old man, an existence dressed in a white robe and stood above all lives.

That was... the Old Man Extermination.

However, in the Old Man Extermination's eyes was Su Ming's madness. He lifted his right hand slowly and pushed his palm on the mask over his face. At the moment his right hand touched the mask, it let out a shrill scream of pain as if it possessed life. As it screamed in pain, it changed swiftly under Su Ming's right hand, as if all the structures within it were being rapidly disassembled.

It was also during this moment that the old voice, which might have come from the mask or space itself, had astonishment appear in his voice for the first time ever, and his voice echoed swiftly in space.

"This... this is... the Old Man Extermination. You are the Extermination of this generation. This is impossible, this is..." For the first time ever, there was panic in that voice, and there was also a great amount of shock that had never appeared before in

his tone. As it reverberated in space, the mask immediately melted at the instant Su Ming's right hand touched it. It disappeared layer by layer until Su Ming's face was shown.

The mask disintegrated with a bang. During that instant, the space around him completely crumbled. As it shattered layer by layer, everything in this place was crushed. As it was pulverized, the old man's voice from space let out a roar that showed he was unwilling to accept defeat.

"Dark Mountain... Xiao Hong... the fragment... Seed of Life Extermination... Su Xuan Yi, so your counterattack is here! I won't accept this! I can't accept this!!"

Bang!

The space completely collapsed to reveal the fifth ocean, along with the blue crystal mirror that had been reduced to shards and was sweeping to the entire area. The strongest ever wind storm also stirred up to rage and sweep through the entire fifth ocean.

End of Arc Four.

Chapter 1033 I Want to Go Home

Arc Five: My Morning Dao World

The storm spread out of the blue crystal mirror with a bang, so strong that it couldn't hand it. As it shattered into countless shards, they swept through the whole area.

Due to the mirror crumbling, the fifth ocean looked as if there was no longer anything suppressing it, and because of it, the ocean let out incomparably loud roars as its impact rushed out.

In the mid of them, the ocean's frenzied rampage caused waves to tumble about. A large amount of fog surged, rising then falling. When the impact spread out and touched it, it immediately disintegrated as if evaporating layer by layer.

If anyone looked at the fifth ocean from above, they would be able to see clearly that as it tumbled about, the force formed a circular ring of light. It traveled through the area with loud booms, as if a shocking destruction had just occurred.

After a moment, the whole place evaporated under the impact. The booming sounds formed echoes in the inner parts of Divine Essence Star Ocean. The vast and boundless seawater... started showing signs that it was about to vanish.

Disappearing along with it were the people with the Masks of Happiness, Anger, Grief, and Resentment, who had begun retreating swiftly after the mirror shattered. Dark waves of light shone on the masks on their faces at that moment before it covered their bodies, which then disappeared without a trace.

Perhaps leaving like that was not their intention, but that light from the mask circling round them and the roars from the fifth ocean formed a power that did not allow them to resist. It was forcibly interfering with everything regarding their intention to escape.

Booming sounds continued resounding in space. The fifth ocean roared as it tumbled and gradually evaporated, slowly disappeared forever from the core of the inner part of Divine Essence Star Ocean.

The spot where the fifth ocean had originally existed was surrounded by a thick fog, and from then on, it would be like that.

Several days later, when the booming sounds gradually grew fainter, a figure appeared in the fog, slowly approaching from the distance. With one step at a time, that figure walked out of the fog, and gray light immediately spread out. It was... the gray Su Ming.

Beside him was a sleazy bald crane whose existence was incredibly discordant with him. Su Ming did not see the crane when he was in the fake Fifth True World, but once he walked out of it, the crane appeared on its own.

Clearly, all of it was related to the fake Fifth True World.

At that moment, as the bald crane followed behind Su Ming, it had its head held high.

Su Ming's expression was dark. When he walked out of the fog, he turned his head around to cast a glance behind him. By then, the fifth ocean was already distorted beyond recognition.

'One of the four people with the Masks of Happiness, Anger, Grief, and Resentment is definitely my Master, and the other is Lie Shan Xiu. I wonder just who are they... and who are the remaining two...

'Now that the fifth ocean dispersed and the four of them disappeared, I cannot find any traces leading to them, but no matter what, all of this has a great connection with the ancient will from Yin Death Region.

'Once I find that ancient will, I'll be able to find them!'

A freezing glare shone in Su Ming's eyes. When he lowered his head, he fell silent. During that time, he remembered his fight against the ancient will within the fake Fifth True World.

That fight might have seemed simple, but it contained the accumulation of countless years' worth of preparation as well as an invisible battle between Su Xuan Yi and the ancient will.

'My previous guess was indeed correct. Dao Kong entering Divine Essence Star Ocean... was due to him being led there by Su Xuan Yi's will. He sent me this body, and his goal was to have me Possess him.

'Once I Possessed Dao Kong, I would obtain True Morning Dao World' kismet, but all of that was just to blind Yin Death Region's will. The true blow... was the Seed of Life Extermination, which is the black stone fragment Xiao Hong gave me in the past!

'All of that was prepared by Su Xuan Yi.' Su Ming's expression was slightly complicated. He remembered the ancient will roaring with refusal to admit defeat before eventually disappearing.

Clearly, that ancient will could learn everything it wanted in Yin Death Region. However, Su Xuan Yi had used some unknown method to hide the fact that Xiao Hong had given Su Ming that black fragment in the past, or rather, he had made the ancient will form an incorrect perception about the stone fragment, because of which it was then ignored.

However, the ancient will understood everything in the end, which was why it uttered that sentence.

When Su Ming remembered all that had happened, complicated emotions rose within him towards Su Xuan Yi. There was resentment there, but also a sigh that meant too many things.

Even though he had never met his father, the man's actions were filled with great fatherly love, no matter whether it was the matter of giving him the Seed of Life Extermination or delivering Dao Kong for Possession. In fact, there were definitely other things that Su Ming had not noticed even till then, and he could sense the fatherly love from them.

"If that's the case, why did you leave me alone in the land of Berserkers? Why did you separate my soul from my physical body? Why did you... leave my mother lying in the fifth kiln?"

"Just... where are you? Who... are you?" Su Ming mumbled. He knew that everything would be revealed before him when he returned to True Morning Dao World.

After remaining silent for a while, a brilliant light shone in his eyes.

"Since I can't find the real entrance to the Fifth True World... then it's time for me to leave the Barren Lands of Divine Essence... and return to True Morning Dao World!" Su

Ming turned his head around and looked at the galaxy in the distance. A hint of resolve and fierceness appeared in his eyes.

He wanted to return to True Morning Dao World and retrieve his physical body. He wanted to know the answers to all the mysteries around him, and he wanted... to find out who was Su Xuan Yi!

"That's right! Let's go back to True Morning Dao World! Darn it all, I want to go back too! I can hear all the crystals in True Morning Dao World calling out to the great me. They're all waiting for the great and supreme me, myself, and I to love them. Hurry up! Let's go quickly!"

The bald crane stood with excitement on its face while shouting with joy. Its expression was of someone mesmerized, a telling sign that it was imagining something happy and glorious.

"Dao Chen..." Su Ming moved forward, and the sound of air being sliced apart rose swiftly as he charged forth.

With the fifth kiln in his possession and as the current scion of the Seed of Life Extermination, he was already the strongest person in Divine Essence Star Ocean. Even if he did run into an enemy who was an Almighty in Mastery Realm, so what? Su Ming did not even need to activate the fifth kiln to fight against that Almighty on his own!

Even if he ran into an Almighty in Fate Realm, Su Ming had the Art to cut fate, and with the fifth kiln, he could fight against that person.

The only regretful thing about it was that Su Ming did not want to take the fifth kiln away. If he left it in its place, it would reach its optimum state in terms of effectiveness.

'I will leave this place and return to True Morning Dao World. I... want to go home!'

Su Ming became faster. As he turned into a long arc and charged forward through the galaxy, his hair color gradually changed. It was not red, but neither was it gold. Instead, it returned into its original color, and nostalgia appeared in his eyes.

"Eldest senior brother, second senior brother... and Hu Zi..." Su Ming became even faster. He shifted and shot across the galaxy.

"Yu Xuan too!" the bald crane immediately shouted by the side. As the Abyss Dragon's boss, it felt that it needed to help the Abyss Dragon speak during that moment.

"Yu Xuan..." A reminiscent look appeared in Su Ming's eyes. In his recollections was a girl who ate roasted seeds with a grin while staring at him.

Several days later, he appeared beyond a burning planet in the region between the inner part and the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean. There were thick flames raging in that planet, and that place... was where Flame Fiends' Progenitor lived. It was his territory.

Su Ming looked at the planet. After some time, he suddenly opened his mouth, and his voice rang with thunderous booms that echoed in all directions while it went to Flame Fiends' Planet.

"Progenitor Huo Kui, do you remember your old friend from the fifth kiln?"

"Huo Kui, do you still remember your Grandpa Crane?!" the bald crane shouted loudly as well. It intentionally stood in front of Su Ming. By doing so, it would make it felt that it was the true center of attention. Since Su Ming was behind it, he was just a guard.

The man and the crane's voices went into Flame Fiends' Planet and into each of Flame Fiends' ears. The thunderous roar formed from those voices turned into a mighty pressure. When it descended, the whole planet shuddered, and all the Flame Fiends immediately shuddered as well. Absolutely no thought of resistance could rise in them under that mighty pressure; they felt like the world was crumbling and nothing existed in it anymore. As they quivered, they let out shrill roars as they prostrated themselves on the ground, unable to stand.

In the depths of Flame Fiends' Planet was a karst cave filled with lava. Within it was a statue which jolted at that moment, and a large number of cracks swiftly appeared on it to reveal the body of Flame Fiends' Progenitor. His eyes were shut, so he opened them swiftly and looked in the direction of the galaxy and spoke in a wild and untamed manner.

"Which old friend... Hmm?"

Before he could finish speaking, Flame Fiends' Progenitor started shuddering, and excitement appeared on his face. Without any hesitation, he turned into a long arc and shot from the ground with a bang, shaking the whole planet. In an instant, he rushed out and stood in the galaxy. When he did so, he saw Su Ming looking at him.

"You... you are..." Flame Fiends' Progenitor stared at Su Ming. The excitement on his face turned into surprised delight. He knew that Su Ming would definitely return one day.

"I've come back."

Su Ming stared at Flame Fiends' Progenitor, and a smile appeared on his face. He could be said to have gone through many things together with Flame Fiends' Progenitor in the fifth kiln. At the start, the two of them had fought against each other, then Huo Kui had submitted to him. In time, they got acquainted with each other and slowly formed a bond that gave them the feeling as if they were friends.

In the end, when Flame Fiends' Progenitor gritted his teeth and stayed after Zi Long and Long Hai had left, Su Ming no longer treated him as an enemy... but a friend.

"Thank you for the matter in the fifth ocean," Su Ming said to Flame Fiends' Progenitor as he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed.

His act of bowing immediately made Flame Fiends' Progenitor nervous. He instinctively took a few steps back and stared at Su Ming with uncertainty. The impression Su Ming left in his mind was too strong, so when he spoke with such courtesy, Flame Fiends' Progenitor found it uncanny, and he became suspicious of it.

Chapter 1034 Entering Western Ring Nebula Once More

When Su Ming saw Flame Fiends' Progenitor reacting that way, he laughed wryly in his heart before making his expression turn aloof and letting out a cold harrumph.

When Flame Fiends' Progenitor heard it and saw the icy expression, he calmed down, finding it normal. Just as he was about to say something, Su Ming raised his right hand and pointed at him.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor instantly started trembling furiously. Gradually, a large amount of black sweat broke out on his skin. Once it was forced out of his body, it swiftly gathered together and turned into a drop of water that was the size of a fist and gave off a foul stench. When it disappeared before Flame Fiends' Progenitor, an incomparably light feeling rose within him.

"The seal has been broken. Huo Kui, don't go to the fifth kiln anymore. If we are destined to meet again, the both of us will surely see each other in the future. I bid you farewell." Su Ming cast a glance at Flame Fiends' Progenitor before leaving. When he turned around and was just about to leave, his footsteps suddenly came to a halt. He turned his head around and asked, "Where does Zhu You Cai live?"

"In Husband Gazing Mountain," Flame Fiends' Progenitor quickly replied. The excitement of seeing Su Ming had already disappeared by then. The wariness and the powerful impression the other had left one hundred years ago rose again in his mind.

Su Ming nodded. When he cast a glance at Flame Fiends' Progenitor, he saw his cautious demeanor, and his lips slowly curled up into a smile. However, he did not know that when Flame Fiends' Progenitor saw that smile, his heart let out a loud thump, and panic instantly rose in his heart.

'What's going on? This person... kills without batting an eyelid. He's ruthless, merciless, and a calculative man, and now... he's smiling? Something's off! Something's very off!'

Flame Fiends' Progenitor became even more cautious, and he took a few instinctive steps back.

"I'm going back to True Morning Dao World. Come... with me," Su Ming said faintly, then turned around without bothering himself with whether Flame Fiends' Progenitor would be conflicted about this. He simply walked into the galaxy.

By his side, the bald crane let out a fake cough before casting a profound glance at Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

"This is very important. Huo Kui, it's best that you think about it carefully. Heh heh..."

At the end, the bald crane still decided to intimidate him. It felt that its current situation was the most wonderful moment in its life. When it frightened Flame Fiends' Progenitor, it did not forget to let out a few snorts.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor was instantly conflicted. He watched Su Ming walking into the distance, then listened to the bald crane threatening him before turning his head around to cast a glance at Flame Fiends' Planet behind him. Hesitation rose within him.

He was actually not worried about his people. With Flame Fiends' divine abilities, even if he was not around, no great accident would happen to them while they were in Divine Essence Star Ocean. And if he followed Su Ming, he might run into a great serendipity.

He was especially certain of it when he remembered Su Ming's actions on their trip one hundred years ago. It immediately gave Flame Fiends' Progenitor confidence. He gritted his teeth, and resolve appeared on his face.

'If I follow such a calculative and conniving person, at the very least, I won't suffer any losses in the hands of other people...' Flame Fiends' Progenitor immediately turned his head around and let out a few shouts at Flame Fiends' Planet.

Immediately, commotion rose within it. Numerous Flame Fiends flew up and stared at their Progenitor. There was a reluctance to part in their eyes, but all of them knelt down and worshiped him simultaneously.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor let out a few more shouts, a telling sign that he was leaving instructions as to what his people were to do after he left. Then, under the gazes filled with the reluctance to part from his people, he turned his head around and turned into a ball of purple flames that charged in the direction Su Ming had left.

.....

Husband Gazing Mountain was like an eternal existence in the galaxy. There were murmurs from the summit coming down all year long. The beautiful legend surrounding

the mountain always stirred up the curiosity of those who came when they heard the murmurs.

At that moment, Su Ming was standing on a stone rising from the ground at the center of the mountain. By his side was the bald crane and Flame Fiends' Progenitor while in front of him was a dark cave.

"Senior Chang He, I would wish to see you." Su Ming wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed to the mountain cave while he spoke calmly.

The mountain cave was quiet. After a long while, a muffled bang came from the mountain cave, and an incomparably plump, hideous, and ugly figure walked out from within.

Zhu You Cai!

His eyes were crimson red. When he walked out, he stared at Su Ming. Conflict and madness were in his eyes. After some time, a calm expression slowly came to his face. He sat down limply by the side, and when he lifted his head to stare at Su Ming, his expression had already returned to its usual calmness.

"You're back," he said faintly.

Su Ming nodded.

"Thank you for helping me when we were in the fifth ocean. About your wife..." When Su Ming said those words, he paused for a moment.

With a calm expression on his face, Zhu You Cai looked at Su Ming's face while waiting for the second part of his words.

"When my level of cultivation is high enough and I can activate the Abyssal World, I will definitely resurrect her," Su Ming stated slowly. His understanding towards Abyss Builders was not great, but he had a general idea that they had an inborn ability to resurrect the dead. However, the prerequisite for it was that Abyss Builders needed to activate their Abyssal Worlds.

Su Ming did not know much about that. The Duke of Crimson Flame did not know about it clearly, but Su Ming believed that as his level of cultivation rose, there would surely come a day when he would understand his race's inborn ability.

"Senior, before that time comes, if you believe me, then I can activate the fifth kiln and have your wife's soul fuse into it to be nourished. With this, we could ensure that during this period of time, her soul will not scatter and vanish." With sincerity on his face, Su Ming bowed.

Zhu You Cai was silent. After a long time, he stood up, lifted his head, and looked up at the summit.

After some time, Zhu You Cai asked calmly, "Have you heard of the legend regarding this mountain?"

"I've heard of it before." Su Ming nodded.

"A woman in the past waited for her husband's return on the mountain. As time passed and things changed, she did not manage to see him. Her body turned into stone, and the presence of her yearning... turned into the mountain.

"When I was in the fifth kiln, I thought that I was already dead, and I was bent on seeking death... but when I died, I woke up again. Yet when I woke up, I was already here, and my body had become as such.

"I don't know the answer to all of this, but I can sense that there is another person in this person. He... coexists with me. And his name is Zhu You Cai." He stared at the mountain as his voice echoed in the area.

"Do you want to go to the summit and meet the woman who has turned into stone?" Zhu You Cai moved and turned into a long arc that charged at the summit.

Su Ming stared at the man leaving into the distance. The legend Zhu You Cai had spoken of might not match with the legend Su Ming had heard, but he still chose to turn into a long arc and charge towards the summit.

When the bald crane arrived at the mountain, its spirits became slightly downcast. At that moment, it stared at the mountain cave with a blank look on its face before also following behind Su Ming in silence.

Ordinary people could not step into the mountain's summit. However, it was different for Zhu You Cai and Su Ming. They did not spend much time before arriving there.

Su Ming saw a stone human at the peak of the mountain.

Based on its appearance, it should have been a woman. She stood at the summit and stared into the distance, her thoughts unknown.

Zhu You Cai stared at the stone, and a complicated expression appeared in his eyes. Perhaps he was not what he claimed to be—he did not wake up not knowing the reason behind his awakening after he died.

Perhaps he knew the reason, but he did not want to say it; it was his secret.

Behind Su Ming, the bald crane shuddered. Grief appeared in its eyes when it looked at the statue. As it watched it, eternity seemed to envelop it. Its current demeanor was something that could not be seen on usual days.

"Why do I feel so miserable, as if my body is about to disappear?" the bald crane mumbled. At that instant, a few scenes flashed in its mind.

Those pictures were indistinct, containing a vague form of a woman. She had her back turned toward the bald crane and was staring at a distant galaxy just like the statue.

The bald crane could only sneak peeks at her while standing behind her and hiding its emotions since it did not want to show them.

That lasted till one day when the woman began crying while staring at the galaxy, and the bald crane heard itself speak in a murmur, "So what if it's Arid Triad Expanse Cosmos? So what if my soul will scatter and vanish? I will help you find him!" That voice echoed in the bald crane's mind. As it listened, it heard the anguish contained in the voice.

The bald crane's vision became blurry. The pictures in its mind shattered and turned into fragments. When they were swept away, the bald crane felt awful and sad.

"In other words, before you have enough power to activate your Abyssal World, I will need to protect you." After a long while, Zhu You Cai averted his gaze from the stone human and turned his head around.

Su Ming remained silent for a moment before he met Zhu You Cai's gaze.

"You can understand it that way."

"I don't need the fifth kiln to provide nourishment to her. With my power, I can constantly ensure that her soul will not scatter and disappear." Zhu You Cai closed his eyes. When he opened them again, a hint of fatigue appeared on his face.

"Then... if you don't fulfill your promise to resurrect her, I will make you suffer... the same pain," Zhu You Cai said calmly and lifted his foot to take a step into the galaxy.

"Once I've made a promise someone, I will definitely not go back on my word. Only death will stop me." Su Ming enunciated each of his words clearly.

He then took a step forward. But just as he was about to leave, he suddenly had a stranger feeling and turned his head around to cast a glance at the bald crane before leaving into the distant galaxy while deep in his thoughts.

While they were going forward, Su Ming walked in front. The bald crane was beside him while occasionally turning its head around to look at the mountain. Behind them were

Zhu You Cai and Flame Fiends' Progenitor. The strange expression on the bald crane's face had attracted Zhu You Cai's attention, but he did not say much about it. He also seemed to be immersed in his thoughts.

As the group charged forward, they left the periphery of Divine Essence Star Ocean and moved past Black Ink Planet to step into Western Ring Nebula.

'Western Ring's foreign lands...'

At the moment Su Ming stepped into Western Ring Nebula, a brilliant light shone in his eyes. Before he left the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, his final stop had been Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands.

Once he arrived there, it would be the time for his Ecang clone to devour the other Ecang souls.

When he succeeded, his level of cultivation would increase by an incredible margin. Only then... would he be able to stir up the disaster in True Morning Dao World once he returned to that place.

Chapter 1035 Welcome Back, Our Liege

The foreign lands were fragmented and existed in countless cracks within the galaxy, including Western Ring Nebula. Even though centuries had passed since then, the mysteries and rumors about the place remained in the cultivators' hearts and did not disappear.

Once they stepped in, then there was a high possibility that they would never be able to get out again. The mysterious veil about that place was something that only existed in name to Su Ming, but to most cultivators, the mighty pressure created by that mysteriousness was powerful enough to suffocate them .

Su Ming had not seen that place for hundreds of years, and when he returned to Western Ring Nebula's foreign land again, he stared at the cracks in the galaxy. He did not say a word. Before his eyes, he seemed to be able to see himself hundreds of years ago being forced inside by the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds. He also saw himself wreaking havoc in their territory once he walked out, and then, he was chased down by an Almighty in Mastery Realm.

If that Almighty in Mastery Realm still dared to attack Su Ming, his palm would be cut off without any hesitation.

Su Ming said faintly, "Senior Chang He, please wait in this place. I still have some matters to attend to here." Zhu You Cai did not speak, but closed his eyes and sat down cross-legged in the galaxy.

Su Ming turned his head around to cast a glance at Flame Fiends' Progenitor. The thin old man immediately looked as if Su Ming's words would be a sacred edict. A fawning smile appeared on his face, and he nodded rapidly.

Before Su Ming could even say anything about that kind of attitude, the bald crane, who no longer seemed dazed and sad as if it simply did not use its head to think, suddenly glared at Flame Fiends' Progenitor, because it sensed an incredibly great threat that rushed straight into its head.

That threat came from the fawning look of Flame Fiends' Progenitor. His expression caused the bald crane to be in an incredibly bad mood. It immediately spread open its bare wings, then put on an arrogant appearance and glared at Flame Fiends' Progenitor with a profound gaze.

It bent its back and used the same fawning gaze to look at Su Ming before quickly saying, "Boss, should I go in and check things beforehand? If there is any sort of danger, with my abilities, I will definitely be able to resolve it. I won't be like certain people whose entire bodies go up in flames and who don't know how to share danger." The bald crane's solicitous words were something rarely spoken by it. Su Ming cast a sideways glance at it and smiled faintly.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor was momentarily stunned before he cast a scrutinizing glance at the bird. An expression of wanting to face danger together with Su Ming appeared on his face. He might be an Almighty in Mastery Realm, but for living spirits, no matter how high their level of cultivation was, it was difficult for them to change their nature.

And it was the case for Flame Fiends' Progenitor as well. When he was yet to become a Progenitor, he might have had quite a promising potential, but him being able to obtain his current level of cultivation and the legacy of the previous Flame Fiends' Progenitor as well as being able to reach Mastery Realm in one go after slaughtering his way through numerous other potential successors was due to him being good at flattering his Progenitor in the past.

However, it had been a long time since he had used that skill. That was why when he used it, he was still a little rusty; he was no longer as good as he was in the past.

Su Ming did not bother with Flame Fiends' Progenitor and the bald crane's passive-aggressive fight. He moved toward the crack leading to Western Ring Nebula's foreign land and charged into the crack, disappearing without a trace.

The bald crane might have been full of bold words, but in truth, from the depths of its heart, it did not want to enter Western Ring Nebula's foreign land again. The time when

it had fallen unconscious had traumatized it. When it saw Su Ming stepping into the place alone, it instantly let out a sigh of relief in its heart. However, anxiety appeared on its face then next moment and it turned its head around to glare at Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

The expression of the man did not change. He grinned and stared at the bald crane before also putting on a fawning expression, but he was laughing coldly in his heart while thinking to himself that he had managed to blind many of his people with that appearance in the past. The calculative and conniving Su Ming was someone that he could not deceive, but the little birdy was definitely something that would be wrapped around his finger.

When the bald crane saw Flame Fiends' Progenitor's demeanor, it instantly felt its heart let out a loud thump and thought that it had underestimated him before. Hence even though it let out cold snort in its heart, its expression changed. Its glare turned into a smile and it went forward to hug the thin Flame Fiends' Progenitor before laughing and acting as if they were great friends.

"Little Fire Boy, when I saw you, I instantly felt that you are someone that I can be great friends with!"

"You flatter me. Fellow Daoist Crane, you have the demeanor of an Immortal and the bones those from the path of Dao, I'm afraid that these old bones do not have to the courage to be friends with someone of such a high social position."

'Hmm? Are you looking down on your Grandpa Crane?'

The man and crane both had their own thoughts in their heads while fighting passively-aggressively with words, but despite them it was quiet in Western Ring Nebula's foreign land. Quite a large number among the one hundred thousand stone monuments had made it past one million feet and stood tall on the ground.

Among them were a certain ten thousand stone monuments. Their color might have seemed normal, but if anyone took a closer look, they would be able to tell... that they were purple!

There were plenty of people sitting and meditating beneath those the hundred thousand stone monuments. Occasionally, they would lift their heads and look at the ten thousand purple stone monuments, and all of their faces would show desire and envy.

At that moment, there were dozens of people sitting under them. They did not move and their expressions were calm. However, in that silence was a determination and an air of supremacy.

That was because they owned the purple stone monuments and because... their stone monuments were the only ones among the one hundred thousand stone monuments

that would not be destroyed by the will of the law in the land. The purple stone monuments would only have people added to them, but not lose anyone of their own.

However, that was not absolute. They might not die because of outsiders replacing them... but there was another law among the purple stone monuments, and all of the people in the place knew about it.

Each year, there would be people who would die, and those ten would be the weakest ten among the lot.

It did not matter how tall was a person's stone monument. As long as their level of cultivation was at the bottom, they would be wiped off within a hundred something years. Because of that, those who possessed the purple stone monuments were somewhat unique, besides the fact that they immersed in practicing cultivation for their whole lives.

"Purple stone monument... It's a pity that when I entered this place, the purple stone monuments did not choose me, or else I would have been able to become one of their tributes... and I wouldn't have to live in constant fear every single day. I would only need to train madly to be able to avoid being killed."

"This is our lives. But why are the purple stone monuments so unique, and from what I see, they only number to about a couple thousands?"

"It's only been a short time since you came here, but this is largely connected... to a legend from the past." In the quiet land with one hundred thousand stone monuments, there would occasionally be a few gazes which would land on the ten thousand purple stone monuments, and the faint voices of a few people speaking would be heard.

While they were discussing things among themselves, the tallest purple stone monument suddenly shone, and an old man walked out from it which was one million something feet tall.

The old man had an ancientness to him. At the instant he walked out, he attracted the gazes of all the people in the area, especially the dozens of people underneath the purple stone monuments. All of them got up and bowed deeply to him.

"Greetings, Progenitor."

The old man nodded. Without saying a single word, he sat down cross-legged underneath his stone monument and closed his eyes to meditate.

"It's Zhao Family's Progenitor!" The low-voiced discussion among the people from the other stone monuments echoed faintly in the air.

"That's right. That person's stone monument has long since reached the size at which he can go out, but he never chose to go. Instead, he's training in a frenzy..."

"I heard from someone about a legend that happened a long time ago... There was a person called Mo Su..."

"Quiet! It's best not to mention his name in this place. He's not someone people like us can talk about."

"Oh? Then why can Big Brother Zhou talk about him?"

"Big Brother Zhou? You're talking about Zhou Kang, right? He's... different from us."

While the people from other stone monuments discussed the old events among themselves, a violent shudder ran through the land with the one hundred thousand stone monuments, as if wind had risen and clouds were surging. Rumbling sounds ring in the air.

They spread in all directions, causing the ground to tremble and the air to continuously tumble about before turning into a drastic change that swept through the land.

Cries of surprise instantly traveled in all directions. The land, which had countless stone monuments standing on it and only had some cultivators sitting cross-legged under them, trembled furiously as booming sounds reached a deafening volume.

While the stone monuments trembled, they immediately shone with dazzling light, and their cultivators were forced out. Some of them had grim expressions on their faces while others panicked openly. They looked upwards together.

Boom!

When a loud bang traveled downwards like the might of heavens, the originally indistinct purple hue above the ten thousand purple stone monuments among the one hundred thousand stone monuments in the land shone with a purple light brighter than anyone had ever seen. As it reached a piercing degree, it instantly covered the land, causing the ten thousand purple stone monuments among the one hundred thousand to be incredibly striking!

Zhao Family's Progenitor's heart shuddered. He opened his eyes, and when he raised his head to look above him, a hint of rarely seen excitement appeared on his face. The other owners of the purple stone monuments beside him started trembling furiously. They could sense an incomparably familiar presence, and there was a great urge within them to bow down and worship it. As the tremors in the land grew stronger, that urge grew stronger in their hearts as well.

The transformation in the land was something that plenty of them did not remember because they had never experienced it, but there were still a handful of people who seemed to have vague recollection, and their expressions changed to resemble something that was akin to a mix between excitement and anxiety.

Zhou Kang was sitting quietly under his stone monument. When he lifted his head to look at the tumbling air above him, a hint of sentimentality appeared in his eyes. He knew... that Mo Su had returned.

"I, Zhao Tian Gang, welcome back our liege!" Zhao Family's Progenitor stood up and wrapped his fist in his palm before bowing deeply towards the sky.

When his ancient voice echoed in the air, all the owners of the purple stone monuments worshiped the sky together.

"Welcome back, our liege!"

Their voices spread out, resulting in loud bangs that shook the people from the other ninety thousand stone monuments. As their expressions changed continuously, the sky roared, the fog and clouds tumbled back madly in two directions to reveal a gigantic crack, and a figure with an indifferent expression walked over from the distance. Slowly, it grew clearer in everyone's eyes.

Mo Su!

1. Zhou Kang: The person who briefed Su Ming about the foreign land when he arrived, was friendly to him, whose wife, Si Ma Yue, was killed, who Su Ming transferred from the blue stone monument to the purple stone monument, and who refused to leave this place because he wanted to remember his wife.

Chapter 1036: Shut Up

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

Su Ming stood in midair as the clouds and fog behind him tumbled about and opened a crack in the air whose inside could not be seen. Within it purple lightning roared, giving Su Ming an air of mystery and mighty pressure in the eyes of the tens of thousands of cultivators.

His presence swept out in all directions and suppressed all the cultivation base of the people on the land. It was not a mighty pressure formed by his purple Ecang, but his own power.

With it, Su Ming was like a God as he swept his gaze across the land. The hearts of all the cultivators who entered his field of vision trembled, and they immediately lowered their heads. Unable to help themselves, they knelt on the ground and worshiped him.

When Su Ming's gaze landed on an old man who was staring at him with a sentimental look while sitting among the stone monuments, he could vaguely recognize that it was Zhou Kang—the middle-aged man from back when he'd first come there.

Quite some time had passed since then, and the change in him was incredibly great.

'Since his love died, his heart fell into decline; he no longer has the desire to live. His body is like a puppet, without any reason to continue living in misery.' Su Ming sighed in his heart. He walked over slowly until he stood on the ground right in front of Zhou Kang.

"Big Brother Zhou," Su Ming said softly.

The white-haired Zhou Kang stared at Su Ming, and a smile appeared on his face. The two of them did not need words between them. As their gazes met, the events from the past rose in their minds.

In the past, Su Ming had been as weak as an ant. If Zhou Kang had not given him directions and pointers, it would have been difficult for him to survive, and Su Ming would not forget such kindness.

"Greetings, my liege!" Zhao Family's Progenitor sucked in a deep breath and bowed again.

Su Ming turned his head around, and his gaze turned cold. He cast a glance at Zhao Family's Progenitor. He had been chased by his enemy into the foreign land with the remaining members of his family, which then all became Su Ming's tributes for the purple stone monuments. Based on what Su Ming saw, Zhao Family's Progenitor had already reached a breakthrough in his level of cultivation. It was a telling sign that he had been training at a mad pace.

"Continue training. When you reach Lunar Kalpa Realm or become even stronger, you'll be free to leave. You can also leave... when all the people with the purple stone monuments attain full completion in World Kalpa Realm," Su Ming said faintly. He swept his gaze past all the people with purple stone monuments, then turned around and took a step into the air.

He gradually disappeared. No one knew where he went, but his short presence had left a mark in the hearts of all the people in the place.

When Su Ming disappeared, the area was silent.

Discussions only rose and echoed faintly in the air after a long while.

“That person is...”

“Who is he?! How can he make the purple stone monuments shine with such light?! He’s also known as the liege by those people with the purple stone monuments!”

“Who else can he be beside the legendary Mo Su from Western Ring Nebula’s foreign land?”

“Mo Su?! He’s Mo Su?!”

Mo Su’s name echoed in the world with the one hundred thousand stone monuments within Western Ring Nebula’s foreign land. During that moment, Su Ming walked out of space and appeared in the one hundred thousand galaxies belonging to the purple Ecang.

As he stared at them, a brilliant light shone in Su Ming’s eyes. Behind him, the incomparably large tree that was Ecang’s real body immediately manifested. A monstrous, malicious presence instantly filled the galaxy.

Su Ming shut his eyes slowly. After a long while, when he opened them again, he threw his head back and roared. As he did so, the gigantic Ecang behind him charged over to gather on him. It was as if Su Ming’s body had turned into an invisible black hole that would devour everything. Once he absorbed Ecang into his own body, cracking sounds came from within him. Branches crawled out of his body, and the whole area began swaying viciously. A purple light shone in Su Ming’s eyes.

At that moment, he could be said to be a complete Ecang, but he was weaker than the Ecang sung in the ballad in the past. However, he was still stronger than the other portions of Ecang’s soul, because they were incomplete. Yet due to the serendipity Su Ming had gained in the fifth kiln, his Ecang had fused perfectly with his body.

Because of it, Su Ming was already a more superior life form than the other fragments of Ecang’s soul!

“Ten-colored Ecangs, I now occupy purple, and next... I will devour!”

A purple glint flashed in Su Ming’s eyes. When the one hundred thousand purple dimensions shone in them, they shuddered with a bang, as if they had turned into his eyes. As they shone, the galaxies trembled.

“I wonder which color will be the first that I will devour?”

Su Ming took a swift step forward. He was so quick that in an instant, he had already crossed an immeasurable distance. The purple galaxies behind him tumbled about, as

they had turned into a purple ocean. They surged and followed behind Su Ming to form a presence that shook the sky and earth.

As booming sounds reverberated in the air, Su Ming reached the edge of the one hundred thousand purple galaxies. If he stepped over, he would enter the region that belonged to another portion of Ecang's soul. There was a barrier separating them, which had been assigned by all of them at the same time in the past. It was a rule not to cross them.

It was a rule shared among the Ecangs. If it had been in the past, this rule would have limited Su Ming's actions. But once his purple Ecang had been completed, what he needed to do was not to fuse with the other portions of Ecang souls so that he could become the Ecang in the ballad. Instead... he was going to devour the other Ecangs to turn them into his nourishment, and with his will being the dominant one... he would become the new Ecang!

This was not rebirth. It was him taking over their place!

Bang!

With a crude manner and without any skill whatsoever, Su Ming brought the one hundred thousand purple galaxies and rammed against the barrier.

Booming sounds echoed in the air, and the invisible barrier started trembling furiously. The noise spread through the whole Western Ring Nebula's foreign land, and it was the sound that belonged to Ecang's one million galaxies!

One Ecang had one hundred thousand galaxies, so ten Ecangs would mean one million galaxies. They were all trembling at that moment. Even though Su Ming had crashed into just one of the barriers, he still managed to shake all the galaxies.

The place with the one hundred thousand stone monuments trembled furiously as well. As if the ground was shaking, all the stone monuments began shivering, especially... the ten thousand blue stone monuments. They trembled increasingly more furiously, because the barrier Su Ming had rammed against was the barrier connecting the purple and blue galaxies.

When booming sounds surged into the air, the people in the one hundred thousand stone monuments sported drastic changes. At the instant confusion appeared on their faces, nine great wills appeared around Su Ming. They charged towards him as if they were fuming in rage.

"Purple! What are you doing?!"

"Purple, do you want to break our promise?!"

“Get lost, purple! If you dare traverse my territory, then you’re intentionally not abiding to our promise, and I will make you fuse with me!”

The furious roars from the wills echoed in the area, but Su Ming’s expression was cold and aloof. He did not answer the words from those wills. Instead, he replied to them with his actions. With the power from the one hundred thousand purple galaxies, he rammed against the barrier again.

As booming sounds surged into the heavens, the barrier trembled even more furiously. During that instant, Su Ming raised his hands and stretched them above his head. The one hundred thousand purple galaxies behind him immediately shrank and charged towards his hands, causing the purple hue in the area to swiftly disappear. As they were reduced to nothingness, Ecang’s will gathered on Su Ming’s hands, along with the power of the one hundred thousand purple galaxies. Su Ming’s own power was also gathered there, and he... swiftly slammed against the barrier.

Cracking sounds rose into the air. Su Ming’s hands shot through the barrier, and the instant he ripped through, a loud crash could be heard; the invisible barrier gained corporeal form in front of Su Ming. A large crack was torn through, and dazzling blue light spilled out from inside. It illuminated Su Ming’s body, making it seem as if he had turned blue.

“So this is the blue Ecang’s territory.” A cold smile appeared at the corners of Su Ming’s lips. He rushed forward and shot through the crack. Along with him came endless purple light. When the one hundred thousand purple galaxies manifested themselves again, they invaded the blue galaxies simultaneously.

“Purple, you’re just asking for death!”

“Purple, all of us will attack you and make you disintegrate. We’ll make you know the price for breaking the promise.”

“Purple, you’ve broken the promise we made in the past. You must die. You must fuse with us. You must become the nutrients for our nine wills to grow, you...”

“Shut up!”

Su Ming threw his head back and roared. When his voice spread across the one million galaxies in loud, thunderous booms, his hair turned red and crimson light shone in his eyes. Heinous murderous aura erupted from his body, and he took a step forward to charge towards the one hundred thousand blue galaxies in the distance.

The moment he did so, a gigantic Ecang appeared in the blue galaxies. The tree was large beyond comparison, and was entirely blue. At the instant his roar shook the galaxy, Su Ming had already closed in on the tree.

Bang!

The loud sound caused the blue galaxies to tremble, and the other fragments of Ecang's soul sent their wills into the area. When their bodies gradually manifested, all of them froze for a moment, and shock appeared on their faces.

In the mid of the loud bangs, Su Ming had crashed into the large blue Ecang. As he did that, countless branches erupted from within his body. Those branches seeped into the blue Ecang's body, and without stopping even for a moment, they started absorbing it in a frenzy.

"Get lost!" the blue Ecang roared.

The power of Ecang burst out from its body, but the instant it touched Su Ming, it immediately disappeared without a trace, as if it was being suppressed. This was not a suppression brought by any form of cultivation case, but... the suppression of a superior life form!

The blue Ecang began shrinking in front of everyone's eyes. As Su Ming absorbed it, its enraged roars turned into cries of surprise, along with shivers filled with fear and disbelief.

"You... you... you aren't a fragment of Ecang's soul, you're complete! This is impossible! This is..."

As the blue Ecang trembled in panic, its body shattered with a bang. Once Su Ming completely absorbed it, he turned around and looked at the eight other fragments of Ecang's soul. The countless branches around him swept across the area. A powerful aura that had never appeared around him before spilled out, Su Ming not holding even a single bit of it back. Within that aura was endless malice and bloodthirst. His murderous aura was shocking to all who sensed it, and the blue galaxies were disassembled with a bang to instantly... turn purple!

Chapter 1037: You Can Choose Not to Come Out

Translator: EndlessFantasy Translation Editor: EndlessFantasy Translation

When Su Ming Possessed the purple Ecang, he had spent dozens of breaths to complete the process, while fusing and absorbing it had required cycles of sixty years for him.

If he had used a long time to devour the blue Ecang, the other Ecangs wouldn't have been too astonished. However, Su Ming... had only spent an instant to devour it!

It was only an instant. His collision against the blue Echang only lasted for the duration of the blink of an eye, and everything... was complete. At the instant the blue galaxies were covered by a shade of purple as if ink had spilled on them, the one hundred thousand blue galaxies turned into a purple world and made the number of galaxies Su Ming's Echang possessed to increase to two hundred thousand!

It also caused Su Ming to become the strongest Echang at the moment he completed the devouring of the blue Echang. In truth, he was already the strongest even before that, but then... he became even stronger!

The whole galaxy was purple as invisible ripples spread out in all directions. Su Ming turned around, and his eyes... were still purple, because that purple was the foundation of his strength. However... the shade of purple then was even more dazzling than before. It was even more piercing, even more enchanting, and the malicious presence spreading out from him was even more monstrous!

His long hair fluttered while his robes moved without wind. As he stood in the purple galaxies and lowered his head slightly, a wild and untamed string of laughter tumbled out of his lips and spread out from him. When it echoed in the galaxies, it had the feeling of Su Ming looking down on the whole universe. As it spread in all directions, the eight other fragments of Echang's soul retreated swiftly as their hearts trembled, intending to leave the blue galaxies which Su Ming had devoured.

They were in the core of the world with the one hundred thousand stone monuments located in Western Ring Nebula's foreign land. Everything that happened there would cause a chain reaction in the world outside. The moment the blue galaxies turned purple and the blue Echang was devoured by Su Ming, a powerful purple light erupted from the ten thousand purple stone monuments in the land with the one hundred thousand stone monuments, instantly covering the whole place.

Immediately, shrill screams of pain rang out. The ones who screamed were not the ones with the purple stone monuments... but the ten thousand people that belonged to the blue stone monuments!

No matter what level of cultivation they possessed, no matter whether they were men or women, the elderly or the young, those ten thousand people all let out incredibly shrill screams at that instant. Blood poured out from their eyes, ears, nose, and mouth. They knelt down on the ground, and as their bodies trembled nonstop, a complicated runic symbol appeared as a bump at the center of their brows. It looked like a Brand, but also as if it had grown at the center of their brows. Its color was blue, and it was shining with a blue light.

Cracks ran down their monuments, spreading swiftly, and a faint blue light erupted from within them. This scene immediately shocked the people around the area. They could not help but allow fear to enter their expressions.

Even though the onlookers were not the ones screaming in pain, the feeling as if they were going through the same pain was incredibly clear. Not knowing what happened to cause this turned into fear at the bottom of their hearts, causing the land with the one hundred thousand stone monuments to immediately rise in commotion. However, the uproar from the tens of thousands of people still could not drown out the incredibly shrill and forlorn screams of pain from the people of the blue stone monuments.

“What happened?!”

“What... What’s going on?! How could this happen?!”

“Their stone monuments... are cracking!”

At the instant the uproar rose, the ten thousand blue stone monuments suddenly shone with blue light from the cracks. It dulled soon, until completely disappearing without a trace. Once it was gone, an incredibly dense and powerful purple light shot out from within the monuments. In the blink of an eye, the originally blue stone monuments became... purple!

The ten thousand cultivators underneath those stone monuments... did not die even though they were screaming at the top of their lungs. Instead, the originally rapidly flashing blue mark at the center of their brows turned purple!

It shone several times before disappearing, and the shrill screams of pain gradually grew weaker. However, as sweat covered those people’s bodies, they looked at their stone monuments with fear.

There were twenty thousand purple stone monuments standing tall within the land with the one hundred thousand stone monuments. This scene instantly attracted the attention of everyone present, and was immediately followed by a silence akin to death itself.

The people seemed to have come to a vague understanding, but the confusion in them and the fear towards the unknown was even greater.

In the core of Western Ring Nebula’s foreign land where the vast one million galaxies were located, unseen to others, were the two hundred thousand purple galaxies that belonged to Su Ming. At that moment, he raised his head, and an indescribable malicious presence spread out from his body. The smile on his lips had a strange enchanting air to it. The gaze of his purple eyes landed on the rapidly retreating fragments of Echang’s soul who intended to leave his purple galaxy.

Su Ming did not take any action to stop them. He simply allowed the eight Echangs to leave. After all, even if he stopped them here, it would not bring about much effect. Su Ming’s goal was to devour their real bodies.

Almost at the instance the Ecangs were about to disappear, Su Ming whipped his head around and his body turned into a long arc. The two hundred thousand purple galaxies were swept up and formed a presence that he'd never possessed before charging into the distance like long arcs.

"I wonder which color will be next."

Purple light shone in Su Ming's eyes, and his speed increased exponentially. Booming sounds reverberated in the galaxy. In just a few breaths, he approached another barrier.

Boom!

Loud booms echoed in the galaxy when Su Ming rammed his body against the invisible barrier. Under the impact, a wide-area tremor shook the barrier. When Su Ming crashed into the blue galaxies' barrier, he had rammed against it about three times before it broke. Yet right then, with just one try, he had already almost made the barrier shatter. He lifted his right hand to strike it fiercely, and immediately, the two hundred thousand purple galaxies gathered on his right hand. When the strike landed, booming sounds rose to shake the sky and earth.

That invisible barrier... was torn to shreds. With loud booming sounds, it was completely disassembled, and a red screen of light spilled out from within. Along with the light came the roars from the crimson Ecang.

"It's crimson."

Su Ming moved. With the vast purple galaxies behind him, he rushed into the crimson galaxies. The purple hue instantly spread out and filled the area while Su Ming fixed his gaze on the crimson stellar river in the galaxy. His body turned into a long arc which looked as if it was going to tear through the crimson galaxies while he charged forward.

"Thou art desirerth to fuse with me? 'Tis shalt be impossible for thee!" An enraged roar came from the stellar river, and the galaxy immediately started rotating. Booming sounds echoed in space, and as the galaxy spun, a gigantic vortex manifested to form a gigantic gust of wind.

It brought with it a destructive will. When it swept through the area, Su Ming could see that there was a big red tree in the vortex. That tree was huge, and its crown was crimson. The Ecang was filled with a destructive will and madness... but it did not dare step out of the vortex. Instead, it hid itself within it. The two eyes resembling annual rings revealed on the tree trunk were glaring at the approaching Su Ming.

The rotating vortex and the crimson Ecang within it were reflected as inverted images in Su Ming's purple eyes. He did not speak, but lifted his right hand and spread his fingers wide in the direction of the galaxy above him. When he slowly clenched his fist, the purple galaxies he'd brought with him instantly covered the crimson galaxy. Anyone who

looked at it would be able to see that besides the center, all the other areas around it were purple.

Almost the instant Su Ming lifted his right hand and clenched it into a fist, the purple that filled the area came to a stop momentarily, as if it had been frozen. Su Ming slowly swung his right arm to form a full circle, and the frozen purple shade immediately began spinning with his arm.

Su Ming then swung his arm to form another circle, the speed of rotations increasing by nearly a hundred times from before. Booming sounds shook the sky and earth, shaking the whole area. If anyone took a closer look, they would be able to see clearly that the direction of the rotations of the purple galaxies were the exact opposite of the rotations of the vortex in the stellar river!

“You can choose not to come out,” Su Ming said in a ghastly manner.

The crimson Ecang in the vortex looked over with fear. Clearly, it had seen through Su Ming’s goal, and it swiftly roared. “My fellow kinsmen, if you don’t think of a way to save me, then this... will be the day when Ecang disappears!”

At the instant the crimson Ecang roared, Su Ming lifted his right hand and swung it to form the third circle. The booming sounds instantly became even stronger. The speed of the rotations from the purple galaxy in the area did not just increase by a hundred times at that time, but by a thousand times!

In the mid of those bangs, Su Ming pointed towards the vortex in the stellar river. Immediately, the purple galaxies shrank swiftly, and while rotating in the opposite direction, they crashed against the vortex in the stellar river.

BOOM!

It felt as if the galaxy was trembling. The loud bang drowned out the crimson Ecang’s roars. At the instant the two vortices spinning in two different directions crashed against each other, the vortex in the stellar river looked like something without a foundation. It was unable to fight against the vortex formed by the two hundred thousand galaxies and collapsed with a loud bang. The crimson Ecang looked at Su Ming with despair. With their differences in status as life forms and the devouring of the blue Ecang, it understood that it was facing a destiny against which it could not fight.

While it was in despair, Su Ming charged towards the crimson Ecang with the rotations from the purple galaxies. They spread out to cover him and his target. After a moment, when the originally crimson galaxy was turned completely purple, Su Ming walked out with an even more eye-catching demeanor.

His long hair reached his waist. As it fluttered, he walked through the purple light. His lean body, the countless swaying branches that filled the area around him, and the even

brighter shade of purple in his eyes created a savage and primitive presence. It spread out from his with a violent energy even though he had his head lowered.

That presence... came from Ecang.

Chapter 1038 Sowing Discord

The crimson Ecang was devoured, and leading to it was the ten thousand crimson stone monuments in the land with the one hundred thousand stone monuments changing color, causing the ten thousand cultivators previously belonging to them to let out shrill screams of pain before the runic symbols at the center of their brows turned purple.

Because of it, there were already thirty thousand stone monuments out of the one hundred thousand in the land which had turned purple and belonged to Su Ming.

Panic and alarm descended on the group of people in the land with the one hundred thousand stone monuments. The commotion grew louder, their fear continued. They might have stopped screaming in pain, but their voices were still echoing in the minds of the people in there, causing an unprecedented drastic change to appear in Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands.

In fact...

Since this drastic change affecting all the blue and crimson stone monuments, it naturally affected the owners of the blue and crimson stone monuments which had reached one million feet or were even taller. They might no longer be in Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands, but even if they were in the world outside, they still could not escape from the change in their souls.

On Western Ring Nebula was a dull planet. There was a middle-aged man sitting beside a lake with a branch in his hand. On that branch was a brilliant green bud from a weeping willow. It was drooping in the water. There was an indifferent expression on his face, as if he was fishing.

There were two beautiful women beside him. They were kneeling beside him and were gently hitting his shoulders. The sky was murky. The land was filled with fog, but only he remained as a clear sight, just like his expression. It was as if nothing could bother him, and his expression was as clear and cool as water.

However, at that moment, his expression suddenly changed. As his expression changed, a violent power erupted swiftly from his body. The two women behind him immediately cried out in surprise before they tumbled backwards. The weeping willow in his hand instantly shattered and was reduced to powder. The lake on the ground also

evaporated in that loud bang, causing the place where he was located at that moment to be filled with a violent power for a moment.

A shrill scream of pain travelled out of his mouth. His body trembled. The two servant girls far behind him had blood trickle out of his mouths. In their panic, they saw the person known as their Progenitor on the planet, the person no one dared to provoke at all to have fear that was never seen before appear on his face. That shrill scream was especially something they had never heard before.

In the midst of that pained scream, a runic symbol appeared at the center of the man's brows. That mark was crimson red, but it was swiftly turning purple. A moment later, when it completely turned purple, the man coughed up a large mouthful of blood. Shock appeared on him, and he lifted his head swiftly to stare at the galaxy with respect shining in his eyes.

'What happened...? Why do I have a feeling that... my stone monument in the Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands... has changed masters?!' His body trembled. As the man's expression changed continuously, he stood up swiftly to charge towards the sky. He wanted to return to Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands to check what had happened. The scene just now caused his heart to feel fear. If he did not understand what was going on, he would feel uneasy. After all... his stone monument was in Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands.

The same scene appeared at the same time in plenty of areas in Western Ring Nebula. In fact, the same sight appeared on a few people among the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds stationed to keep an eye over the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. However, once they finished screaming shrilly, all the people would have fear and alarm appear on their faces while their hearts were filled with anxiety.

In Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands, Su Ming, who had devoured the blue and crimson Ecangs, walked out of the three hundred thousand purple galaxies. At the same time, he closed his eyes slightly and lifted his arms to simultaneously punch his sides swiftly.

That was two punches. At the instant he threw them out, the three hundred thousand purple galaxies tumbled about and surged to the sky. As loud booming sounds reverberated in space, two gigantic purple vortices appeared swiftly beside Su Ming to charge towards the distance while rumbling.

This time, Su Ming was not going to devour just one portion of Ecang's soul, he was going to devour two of them!

Booming sounds shook the sky and earth. It lasted for only a few breaths. At the instant two loud sounds of something trembling surged into the heavens, the barriers by Su Ming's two sides crumbled. Orange and green lights spread out from the shattered barriers.

"Today is the day Ecang descends in the universe. Why... do all of you resist. With my will, I will rebuild Ecang. My glory is also your glory!" Su Ming's voice echoed in space, and during that moment, he moved to charge towards the orange galaxies.

"Stop him! If we don't stop him, then all of us will be destroyed by him! If I'm devoured, he will become stronger, and it'll definitely be impossible for all of you escape from being killed!!" With a voice filled with panic that had never appeared in it, the orange Ecang in the orange galaxies cried out, and its voice echoed swiftly in space.

"How do we stop him?"

"He has already devoured blue and crimson. He is also a complete life form. His current might is something we absolutely cannot hope to stand against. How... do we stop him?"

"Green, the barrier leading to your galaxies has already been opened. Attack! Fight together with orange. If you don't attack, you won't be able to escape from the fate of fusing into him!"

"That's right, green. Take action first and resist him. Our barriers have yet to open. Even if our wills descend in the place, it'll be useless. Since purple is so conceited that he dared break two barriers at once... you have to work together with orange and make him fuse into you!!"

The divine thoughts of the remaining portions of Ecang's soul echoed in space. A hysterical roar travelled out from the green galaxies, and a violent impact rushed into the green galaxies to turn into a gigantic green Ecang tree. A rampaging life force spread out swiftly from its body, and the green Ecang turned into a long arc to charge forward towards the orange galaxy where Su Ming was.

However, at the instant it approached the orange galaxy, the orange Ecang's despair-filled roars echoed swiftly in the galaxy.

"It's not that I am against you devouring me and wiping off my existence, but you intend to devour me, not have me fuse into you. This... is something where I'd rather destroy my own will and break the promise so that my body, which will no longer possess any form of consciousness, to return to the universe's embrace!!"

There was a crazed will in that voice. At the instant it echoed in the air, a loud bang that shook all one million galaxies immediately travelled into space. As that sound rose up, the orange galaxies immediately shattered to pieces and completely collapsed.

At the same time, as the orange Ecang chose to wipe out his consciousness and return to the place of its origins, the ten thousand orange stone monuments it possessed in the land of the one hundred thousand stone monuments immediately had a large number of cracks appear on them before they simultaneously turned into ashes. Even the ten

thousand cultivators in possession of those stone monuments shuddered simultaneously, and without any pained screams, their bodies were completely torn, and their bodies as well as their souls were destroyed and scattered into nothingness.

At the same time the orange Ecang was willing to return to its place of origin and as it disintegrated, seven seeds shining in orange light spread out swiftly to rush towards the green Ecang. They instantly rushed into its body, causing a jolt to run through the green Ecang's body, and during that same moment, it let out a long howl.

As it howled, the aura from the green Ecang swiftly increased exponentially, and it was several times stronger than before. At the same time, five howls echoed in space from the one million galaxies. The other five-colored Ecangs had also absorbed the origin of power from the purple Ecang's body after it wiped out its consciousness. After it fused into them, all of them instantly became stronger.

There were six orange seeds. Su Ming also absorbed one of them, but it was just a fragment of it, and it was a far cry from when he previously devoured the complete portions of Ecang souls. With one move, he charged towards green Ecang, who had frozen in space while the orange galaxy crumbled.

There was madness within the green Ecang's eyes, which looked like annual rings. Once he fused with the rampaging life force spreading out from its entire body, it shut its eyes swiftly.

"The person who eventually has the rest of us fuse into you and forms the complete Ecang, remember this... kill this person as an offering to me for willingly becoming a source of power!" The green Ecang knew that even if it had absorbed one of the seeds that was the source of power formed by the orange Ecang, it still would not be able to escape from Su Ming. Since the orange Ecang could wipe off its consciousness and return to its place of origin, then... it could also do the same.

As it closed its eyes, a bang came out from its body, and a power that caused the heavens to roar immediately travelled into space. As its body crumbled and it exploded into pieces, it turned into six green seeds that shot swiftly into the space around the area. Even Su Ming could not manage to stop the six green seeds from disappearing with his speed. One of them charged to his body and fused instantly into him, and during that moment, five roars immediately shot into space.

Even more powerful ripples of power were contained in those roars. The remaining five portions of Ecang souls became much stronger than before. However, individually, they were still not Su Ming's opponent. However... if four more of the five portions of Ecang souls were willing to turn into the origin of power, then the final Ecang who would appear... would be the Ecang who could shake the universe and existed in the Old Man Extermination's ballad!

It had been set up by Sui Chen Zi in the past and was forced to split up to heal themselves and wait till their injuries were recovered before they could fuse together to be born again. Yet now, if they fused together in this manner, while it might still become the Ecang in the past, it would not be as strong as it were in the past. However... even if it was no longer as strong as it was, it would still pose as a threat to Su Ming once it possessed its memories.

Su Ming had thought about this previously, which was why he had been so efficient and firm in his actions when he devoured the previous two... but such a change had still occurred.

But since he had already predicted that this would happen and Su Ming still had the galls to devour the portions of Ecang souls, then he would naturally have other methods to handle this. At that moment, the connection between him and the remaining five portions of Ecang souls was very intriguing. The Ecang he chose would turn into an origin of power, and the last one who was not chosen would become the dominant will to make the real Ecang awaken.

Because of it, the portions of Ecang souls he chose would mean that they would have lost the right to become the real Ecang. For the remaining five portions of Ecang souls, this was the most important thing to them, and it was even more important than their lives.

Su Ming's lips slowly curled up into a strange and enchanting smile.

"It's not that I, Su, must devour all of you today. I only want to devour three complete portions of Ecang souls. Now... I am lacking one more.

"If I just devour one more, I will stop. I wonder which of the five of you will be willing to fulfill my wish." Right when Su Ming finished speaking, the five portions of Ecang souls immediately had their hearts tremble furiously. The threat from Su Ming was incredibly great to them, but they did not want to wipe out their own consciousness either... but who among the five of them would be willing to be devoured?

Chapter 1039 White, Black, Gray

The Ecangs could not choose. None of them would willingly allowed themselves to be devoured, but Su Ming's goal was not to make them choose. The three hundred thousand purple galaxies gathered on him, and he turned into a long arc that charged towards another invisible barrier.

The power of three hundred thousand galaxies allowed Su Ming to move as if he was splitting apart bamboo in one smooth move. At the instant he touched the invisible

barrier, it let out a bang and was crushed in one blow. When it was torn into pieces, a white galaxy spread out from within.

It was the white Ecang's place!

In truth, the ten Ecang's souls were not truly equal in terms of power. Black, white, and gray were the strongest, while the remaining seven colors were close in terms of strength among themselves. At the instant Su Ming saw white light, his eyes sparkled.

He stepped into the white galaxy and saw that there were no stellar rivers there. It was a stark difference from the other seven colors, for at the center of the galaxy an old man was sitting in white robes. He had opened his eyes at that moment and was staring at Su Ming calmly.

"I've been waiting for you to come," the old man in white said faintly. His voice echoed in the galaxy, and there was an ancient and gentle tone to his words.

"It doesn't matter whether you are Ecang or a cultivator, the signs of your life belong to Ecang. It doesn't matter whether you were previously Ecang or if you will just become Ecang in the future, you... will still be Ecang." The old man stood up slowly. His voice was mild, and there was a tone to his voice that would make others feel fond of its owner.

"The ten Ecang souls have three colors acting as the dominant souls, and the remaining seven are complements... White controls Ecang's kindness and manipulates the changes in the universe. Black controls Ecang's evil and manipulates the madness which would bring about the world's destruction. Gray... is stillness. It will live with the universe, and die with the universe."

Su Ming's expression remained the same. He stared at the old man in white before him coldly. He took a step forward, and as he approached, the old man did not dodge. There was not even a hint of change on his face.

"Which is why as long as you are Ecang, it does not matter to me whether you will devour or fuse with me. I hope... that there will come a day when Ecang will descend into the universe once more. Since you can do it, then why should I be stingy with my consciousness? Why should I be bothered... if you devour me?" The old man smiled faintly. When Su Ming came to his side, he closed his eyes slowly.

His demeanor immediately made a barely noticeable glint appear in Su Ming's eyes. The previous fragments of Ecang's soul he'd met were mostly violent and did not possess a great amount of intelligence. However, the old man in white that was the white Ecang was completely different from them.

Su Ming did not speak. As his eyes sparkled, his speed increased exponentially, and he closed in on the old man. When he raised his right hand, a large number of branches

stretched out from his fingers to charge towards the center of the old man's brows before seeping through it.

The old man's body began withering before his eyes. A large amount of the essence of life that belonged to Ecang surged into Su Ming's body. The amount far surpassed what he got from the blue and crimson Ecangs, and it was so great that the purple light in Su Ming's eyes instantly became even brighter.

However, at the instant Su Ming was about to devour and absorb the essence of life from the old man that was the white Ecang, the old man's eyes flew open. A sinister look appeared in his gaze and he formed a seal with his hands before he flinging them to his sides.

"If Ecang is an illusion, then the universe is real. If Ecang is real, then the universe is an illusion!"

As the old man's voice echoed, the white light from the white galaxy where he was located instantly grew to a piercing degree. Booming sounds reverberated in space, and the entire space... turned into a gigantic white Ecang tree during that instant.

The tree was caught between the state of being an illusion and something that had corporeal form. It filled the entire galaxy... or rather, the white galaxy was part of its body. At that moment, if the body of the Ecang tree appeared, then it would mean that it had already swallowed Su Ming.

"This person intends to sow discord among us. My fellow kinsmen, do not be deceived by him. I am willing to wipe out my consciousness and self-destruct with him. If I succeed, then someone among you will definitely be able to awaken Ecang. If I fail... then you must do the same thing as I did!"

At the instant the old man's voice echoed in all directions, the gigantic white Ecang collapsed, torn into pieces. It activated the destructive power within it and swept up Su Ming... intending to make him die with it.

However, the instant the white Ecang exploded, a purple hue that surged into the heavens spilled out from Su Ming's body, and the purple Ecang appeared inside the white Ecang. This scene was just like how Ecang had replaced Sui Chen Zi in the past and was born within the universe!

Su Ming's purple Ecang was born from the white Ecang's destruction. At the instant he appeared, purple and white flashed rapidly in the galaxy. When loud booming sounds shook the place, the white Ecang completely broke down. Its origin of power was split into five parts, and one of them fused with Su Ming's body. The remaining four seeped through space and headed to the other four Ecangs.

This scene was the equivalent of the previous events repeating themselves. If this continued, then there would definitely be one Echang who would eventually awaken its roots and have the will of Echang from the past to descend once again in the universe.

This was the one thing Su Ming did not want to happen the most. At that moment, he was watching the four origins of power disappear into space. Right when he appeared from the disintegrated white Echang, his voice echoed in the one million galaxies with a monstrous killing intent and determination into the hearts of the four remaining Echang.

"Whosoever snatches my origin of power will be the next to die! Let me devour this white Echang, and I will give you a relative amount of time!" As his voice reverberated in space, his words reached the black, gray, indigo, and yellow Echang.

Among them, the black Echang was the first to devour the origin of power from the white Echang without any hesitation. Soon, the gray Echang did the same thing. The galaxies in which they were located spread out and became stronger.

However... the indigo and yellow fragments of Echang's soul hesitated for a moment before deciding not to devour the origins of power. Instead, they activated their own powers and sent them outwards to push away the origins of power from the white Echang out of their galaxies. Soon, the color of their lights spread out so that Su Ming would know of their decisions.

A glint appeared in Su Ming's eyes. He sucked in a deep breath and instantly absorbed the two white origins of power from the white Echang. He threw his head back and let out a long roar. Purple light filled his body, and the three hundred thousand galaxies he previously possessed increased to around four hundred thousand.

"Black, gray, you're just asking for death!" A purple glare shone in Su Ming's eyes. He ignored the galaxies belonging to the yellow and indigo Echang and moved swiftly towards the other two.

"Then go on ahead and devour us. There are four of us remaining. As long as I can last till the end, I will definitely be the one who will take the initiative to awaken Echang. By then, even if I still can't fight against purple, at least I can still protect myself."

A glint appeared in indigo Echang's eyes. It realized that once it had devoured a part of the orange and green Echang's origins of power, it seemed to have gained enlightenment and become more intelligent.

The yellow Echang had the same thought.

Su Ming was so quick that he instantly rammed his fist against the invisible barrier. As the it crumbled, black light spread out. A low roar reverberated in space, and a fist stretched out from the crack in the barrier to collide against that of Su Ming.

With a loud bang, the fist from the black galaxy tumbled back to reveal an old man dressed in black robes. With killing intent on his face. He forced himself to stop as he moved back before rushing at Su Ming again.

A glint shone in Su Ming's eyes. With a cold snort, he took a step forward.

"Desolate!"

The old man who was the black Ecang threw his head back and roared. Immediately, the black galaxy where he was instantly turned into a gigantic black Ecang, and as if it was collapsing, it fell towards Su Ming.

"Desolate!" Su Ming shouted as well. The four hundred thousand purple galaxies around him turned into the purple Ecang. With the same posture and the same manner of falling down, the two Ecangs crashed into each other, and booming sounds surged into the heavens. The invisible barrier connected to the black galaxy also let out a loud rumble.

In the mid of those rumbles, it sounded as if there was someone ceaselessly pounding against the barrier, intending to walk out from within. Clearly, behind that invisible barrier were the galaxies belonging to the gray Ecang.

"Disaster!"

The old man who was the black Ecang allowed a large amount of his essence of life to trickle out from his mouth. It was not blood, but his origin of power. When they had crashed into each other, he found that he was absolutely not Su Ming's opponent. As he roared, the leaves on his tree crown shuddered. As they swiftly shot out, they formed a storm and charged towards Su Ming with a howl.

"Disaster," Su Ming said flatly. He also knew the same divine ability!

The purple Ecang turned around, and immediately, countless purple leaves fell off to turn into a vortex before charging forward. Booming sounds reverberated in space again. The old man who was the black Ecang coughed up a large amount of essence of life again. As his body fell backwards, the invisible barrier behind him shattered with a bang. A large amount of gray light spread out, and an old man dressed in gray robes stepped out.

Once he appeared, he did not look towards Su Ming. Instead, he charged towards the old man in black. Understanding and resolve appeared in the eyes of the fallen man. As he gritted his teeth, he did not avoid and simply allowed the old man in gray to approach him. The other pushed his palm against the top of his skull, and the old man who was the black Ecang shattered with a bang. A great amount of origin of power which was Ecang's essence of life turned into fog and charged towards the old man in gray who sucked in a breath before fusing with him.

At the same time, Su Ming's eyes sparkled. He brought his arms up and took a few swift steps forward before he swinging his arms and stretching them out. He then brought his palms together in front of him with a loud clap. It instantly stirred up a violent gust of wind in the galaxy at the spot where his palms collided. The wind howled with a shocking momentum, his clap having been formed with the power from the four hundred thousand purple galaxies merged together. Because of that, the wind that was stirred up was also purple.

It charged forward. In the blink of an eye, it blew against the origin of power from the black Ecang, which the old man in gray was absorbing. When the origin of power which resembled fog was blown apart, it was sent behind the old man in gray.

When Su Ming delivered his attack, he did not hesitate. The effect it was to bring was incredibly important, since it forced the old man in gray to stop in his act of absorbing and fusing with the origin of power.

Chapter 1040 Becoming the Master of the Foreign Lands

At the instant there was a pause, Su Ming took a swift step forward. The four hundred thousand purple galaxies behind him rotated with a bang and turned into a boundless mouth. As Su Ming closed in, he sucked in a deep breath in the direction of the old man in gray.

The gray Ecang's eyes shone with a deadly still light as he glared at Su Ming. At the instant the boundless mouth came to devour him, he roared towards the heavens.

"Indigo, yellow, what are you waiting for?!"

As he roared, the eyes of the indigo Ecang in the indigo galaxy immediately sparkled. It moved and charged towards the invisible barrier where the yellow Ecang was before ramming into it.

A hint of conflict appeared in the yellow Ecang's eyes, but it soon turned into resolve. It charged forward as well and rammed against the invisible barrier separating it from the indigo Ecang.

Booming sounds surged into the heavens. The barrier collapsed, and the indigo and yellow Ecangs were able to see each other, and the greed in mirrored in the other's eyes. Without exchanging a single word, they crashed into each other. This was a fusion that did not require any form of divine ability, but it was difficult to determine just who would become the dominant soul, since the both of them were very similar to each other in terms of power.

"Is this your plan?"

Su Ming laughed coldly. The gaping mouth formed by the four hundred thousand galaxies behind him closed in with a roar. The deadly still look in the old man in gray's eyes became stronger. He raised his arms and grabbed his right wrist with his left hand. Once he straightened his right hand to perform the knife-hand strike, he lifted it, and his eyes brightened before darkening once again. A destructive power that caused Su Ming's heart to tremble erupted from the old man in gray.

"Purple, you don't have this skill in the memories you obtained... Echang Slices the Heavens!"

The old man in gray shouted fiercely, then brought his right hand down in a slicing motion in Su Ming's direction!

A gray flash of light appeared in front of the old man in gray, tearing through the galaxy. Su Ming's pupils shrank. The torn galaxy reminded him of what he'd seen at the edge of the fifth ocean, when Zhu You Cai cut through heaven and earth with a swing of his Life Inequity Spear and managed to create... a crack in space that devoured thousands of cultivators and several Almighties.

The gray crack gave Su Ming a familiar feeling, and the same sense of danger rose in his heart. He saw the old man who was the gray Echang shattering after he executed that slash to turn into a large amount of origin of power that spread through the area.

The slash it executed was clearly one that required it to wipe off its consciousness as a price!

The origin of power spreading out from the gray Echang tumbled backwards and charged into the galaxy where the yellow and indigo Echang's were fusing together. Judging by the looks of it, it wanted to fuse with them and be absorbed by the remaining two Echang's to speed up their fusion and help facilitate the speed in awakening the real Echang from the ballad.

The origin of power from the gray Echang was not going to fuse with them alone. Instead, it swept up the origin of power formed after the black Echang broke down as well. If Su Ming dodged the incoming gray crack, then he would lose the initiative, allowing that origin of power to fuse with the yellow and indigo galaxies. Not only would it speed up the manifestation of Echang's real self, it would also allow the awakened Echang to be much stronger.

The only way for Su Ming to stop it and grow strong was to face that incoming slash head-on. Only then would he have enough time to devour the black and gray Echang's' origin of power so that the yellow and indigo Echang's would be unable to face him even after they had fused together and awakened.

A fierce light shone in Su Ming's eyes. His hair transformed into gray, turning him into the gray Su Ming who symbolized absolute rationality and composure. At that moment,

even if the galaxy crumbled before him, his emotions would not change even a single bit. During that instant, the Malicious Eye he had obtained also rose at the center of his brows and opened. An enchanting light shone from within it.

The third eye could allow Su Ming to magnify everything by numerous times, allowing him find weaknesses. With the absolute rationality, it was enough for Su Ming to erupt with power that surpassed what he usually possessed.

At the same time, the four hundred thousand galaxies roared behind him. The gaping mouth formed in space became even more ferocious. Its presence was like a tidal wave, and behind it, a gigantic gray moon that belonged to those in Lunar Kalpa Realm manifested.

The galaxy trembled upon its arrival As clouds surged in all directions, booming sounds tumbled about and reverberated in space.

Su Ming seized the space beside him with his right hand, and the purple-black ring on his thumb immediately turned into the Life Inequity Spear. Once Su Ming seized it, he closed his eyes. Only the third eye at the center of his brows remained open, staring at the incoming dimensional crack formed by Ecang's slash. In his head, the attack Zhu You Cai had executed beyond the fifth ocean to sweep through the galaxy repeated itself!

What joy was there in living?

Su Ming replayed that attack in his mind a thousand times. His third eye had also used an Art to notice minute details to ceaselessly magnify Ecang's slash, which allowed him to see every single subtle change within it as well as the presence spreading out from it.

Ecang's slash came charging forward with a howl. When it was less than a hundred feet away from Su Ming, it became so quick that it closed in on him in an instant. However, when Su Ming looked towards it with his third eye, the flow of time around him seemed to have become much slower. Zhu You Cai's attack which had sliced apart the heavens had been replayed nearly ten thousand times in his mind by then.

"There is a will in the universe. It is the domineering will of the Almighty in Life Realm. That is... what belongs to a person when he has almost reached Death Realm and has understood life and death in his life. That is why he said those words..."

"What joy is there in living?"

"What joy is there in living?" Su Ming mumbled.

The crack formed by Ecang's slash brought with it a desire to destroy everything as it closed in on Su Ming. At that moment, it was less than ten feet away from him, and Su Ming's robes fluttered madly. The gaping mouth formed by the purple galaxies behind

him started showing signs of disintegrating. The moon formed when he reached Lunar Kalpa Realm also started trembling.

"What joy is there in living? If someday, all my friends leave me, my mother will never be able to wake up again, Su Xuan Yi disappears, and my elder, Tian Xie Zi, my senior brothers, and all the people I know... disappear into the passage of time and I am the only left in the universe..."

"Then... what joy... is there in living?" A lonely air spread out from Su Ming's body. He opened his eyes, and there was loneliness as well as an absent-minded look in his eyes. At the instant Ecang's slash was about to touch him, he gripped the Life Inequity Spear, brought it up before him, and swung it gently.

While his appearance and the feeling he gave to others might not be the exact same as that of Zhu You Cai, it was quite similar. With that one slash, the moon behind Su Ming broke down and turned into countless shards that charged towards the long spear in his hand before fusing into it. Su Ming's Life Inequity Spear then swept forward with a power that seemed to be able to slice apart the galaxy... and a crack was torn open!

At the same time, as if the Life Inequity Spear in Su Ming's hand had turned into a black hole, the gaping mouth formed by the four hundred thousand purple galaxies behind Su Ming was absorbed by the tip of the spear as if they were fog, and the power to slice apart the galaxy instantly increased exponentially.

Su Ming's body trembled, and it was because he could sense that quite a large amount of his cultivation base, his life force, and all the essence in his body had been absorbed by the Life Inequity Spear to slice apart a dazzling crack in the galaxy. It was around five feet long.

At the instant that crack appeared, a destructive power spilled out from within to charge towards Ecang's incoming slash.

Violent booming sounds shook Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands. The Life Inequity Spear in Su Ming's hand bounced back. He coughed up a large mouthful of blood and staggered a few steps back. When he raised his head, an aloof look appeared in his eyes.

That strike could be said to be his strongest attack. It was what he executed after he imitated Zhu You Cai's attack. He might not have done it perfectly, only managing to imitate three-tenths of it, but that amount alone was enough for it to severely wound all... Almighty in Fate Realm. It could also fight against the Ecang's slash executed by the gray Ecang with its consciousness as the price. It had not been complete though, only possessing one-tenth of the power of the real Ecang.

As loud bangs reverberated in space, Su Ming forced his body to stop. A feeling of weakness filled him, but resolve appeared on his face. He forced himself to rush

forward, then opened his mouth wide to suck in a sharp breath in the direction of the origins of power from Echang who intended to fuse with the yellow and indigo galaxies.

With it, the vast amount of origins of power from the gray and black Echangs tumbled backwards and seeped into him through all parts of his body. As they provided nourishment to him, he threw his head back and roared. Cracking sounds came from within him, and his long hair grew until it reached his feet. His appearance grew even more strange and enchanting, and the purple glare in his eyes became more aggressive than ever!

At the instant Su Ming prevented the origins of power from the gray and black Echangs fusing with the yellow and indigo galaxies and his roar reverberated in space, a ruthless, brutal presence filled with endless savage air erupted from the yellow and indigo galaxies. A will that looked down on the whole universe and which seemed as if it had just been awakened filled the yellow and indigo galaxies.

Su Ming's eyes shone. When he raised his right hand, the Life Inequity Spear returned to his palm, and he held it again to stare at the tumbling yellow and indigo galaxies.

"You... want to devour me?" A muffled voice tinted with an ancient and archaic presence came from all directions.

The instant that voice spoke, a destructive power spread out from the yellow and indigo galaxies with a bang, before Su Ming could do anything. As that loud bang surged into the heavens, Su Ming's expression changed. It was not the level of cultivation or the strength of the awakened Echang which caused his expression to change... but the determination and the conniving nature in that creature from the ballad!!

At the instant it self-destructed, Su Ming sensed the twenty thousand stone monuments from the yellow and indigo stone monuments in the land of the one hundred thousand stone monuments explode at the same time. Echang's presence turned into twenty thousand parts and swiftly crawled into the bodies of the twenty thousand cultivators affiliated to it, causing those cultivators to instantly swell up. As they roared, the whole Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands began trembling furiously. Then, as if an exit had been forcefully opened, a vast suction force swept up the twenty thousand cultivators with Echang's presence and instantly... relocated them outside Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands to appear in different corners of Western Ring Nebula!

"There are twenty thousand of us! As long one of us escapes, there will come a day when I... Echang, will rise to power again!" Twenty thousand voices like thunder roared and reverberated in Western Ring Nebula.

This was the same as when Echang had separated itself into ten to heal after its battle against Sui Chen Zi. However, it was injured even worse after Su Ming's actions, up to the point that it did not dare to stand but instead chose to split itself... into twenty thousand parts!

Su Ming's expression was dark as he stared at the empty galaxy in the foreign lands. That action had exceeded his expectations; it was something he had not predicted beforehand.

Yet no matter what, he had already become the master of Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands.

Chapter 1041 My Universe

As Su Ming stared at the empty galaxy in the foreign lands, his face turned a little pale. Once he coughed up a mouthful of blood, it returned to normal. There was a vast amount of life force rising in his body to surround him and turn into a presence that surged into the heavens. It stirred up Su Ming's cultivation base and caused it to continuously rise.

Behind him, the gray, red, and golden moons appeared at the same time. They flashed continuously, and Su Ming's long hair, which had reached his feet, flew up to form a circle behind him. It filled him with an incredibly strange and enchanting air.

His pupils were purple. There were purple galaxies all around him, and standing there, he was... the master of the land!

"With the thought processes of my gray self's personality, I won't be able to imitate the epitome of affection... which is contained in the Art that questions whether there is joy in living. When I forcefully copied it... I could only obtain its form and not its meaning, and I even injured my own body," Su Ming murmured.

Fortunately, he had devoured most of the Ecang's soul. Because of it, he could recover from his injuries after he coughed up a mouthful of blood, or else, his injuries would have definitely been worse.

'The yellow and indigo Ecangs might have split into twenty thousand and fled... but I have become complete a long time ago. The devouring of the other Ecangs was only to make myself stronger. If I had devoured all of them, I would have become even stronger, but it's not gonna be much of a problem.' Purple light shone in Su Ming's eyes, then he slowly closed them.

After a moment, when he opened them again, Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands rumbled so loudly that the sound surged into the heavens. Eight hundred thousand galaxies all turned purple, and a thick purple hue dyed the foreign lands.

'I am already complete, so... I will not have two hundred thousand galaxies lacking in this place because of the yellow and indigo Ecangs departure.'

Su Ming raised his right hand and swung it towards the galaxy before him. With it, the galaxies in Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands shuddered and started dividing. As they split up, loud rumbles reverberated in space, and the missing two hundred thousand galaxies took shape.

Because of it... there were still one million galaxies in the place. However, they were no longer of ten colors, like before. Instead, there was only one color—purple!

The purple had become the master of the area!

The purple had become the paragon in that place!

Su Ming lifted his head and stared at the galaxy. His gaze seemed to be able to penetrate Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands and see the universe beyond.

'The twenty thousand fragments born from the yellow and indigo Ecangs... I look forward to the day when you will rise in power and be able overturn the heavens, then devour one another until all you will mold yourself to perfection...

'I look forward to that day greatly.' Su Ming smiled faintly.

Within Western Ring Nebula were twenty thousand faint long arcs charging forward before disappeared in the galaxy. Faint booms reverberated in space at that moment. It was the self-destruction of twenty thousand cultivators. That was where the real Ecang's ruthlessness lay. To prevent Su Ming from chasing it down, it gave up on the twenty thousand cultivators as nourishment and chose others to serve its purposes.

At the instant the bodies of the twenty thousand cultivators collapsed, nearly twenty thousand male and female cultivators shuddered. It did not matter what they were doing, be it fighting or meditating, all of them trembled at once. It was as if an invisible force had rushed into their minds, taken root, and hidden itself to start growing in peace.

On one planet, the cries of an infant echoed in the air. In a corner, a woman lay on the ground. Blood pooled all over the ground beneath her as she stared upwards with her eyes wide open, but she was no longer breathing.

The infant climbed out of his mother's body by himself. When his cries rang out, his body suddenly shuddered. He quietened, and a yellow glow shone in his eyes. That glow lasted for only a moment before disappearing, and his eyes returned to their usual hue.

At the same time, there was a True Guard in Western Ring Nebula, the area which belonged to True Sacred Yin World among the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds keeping watch over the place. He was originally patrolling, but a jolt suddenly wrecked his body. He lowered his head, and when he raised it again, an indigo light flashed through his eyes before it disappeared the next moment.

Su Ming stepped in space within Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands and disappeared from the purple galaxies. When he reappeared, he was already in the land with the one hundred thousand stone monuments. However, by then there were only eighty thousand of them.

The land was dead silent. All the cultivators were pale. They stared at the empty spots where the twenty thousand stone monuments had been with fear in their eyes.

They had also noticed a long time ago that all the stone monuments had turned purple.

When Su Ming walked out of thin air, a powerful, mighty pressure descended on all the people's hearts. Su Ming had not even needed to release that mighty pressure; it had appeared naturally. Due to it, the cultivators below felt that they had to worship Su Ming, that if they showed even the slightest amount of disrespect to him, their bodies and souls would be immediately destroyed.

"Greetings, my liege!"

As everyone trembled, no one knew who was the first to say those words, but after that first person, the people in the area bowed down and worshiped Su Ming, who had walked out of the air.

"Greetings, my liege!"

Their voices were as loud as thunder which reverberated in all directions, Su Ming swept his gaze across the land before fixing his eyes on the empty spots where the yellow and indigo Echang stone monuments had been. As a glint shone in his eyes, the empty spots suddenly started squirming. Stone monuments shot up from the ground, and in an instant, the empty spots filled up. The number of stone monuments in the land returned to one hundred thousand once more.

One hundred thousand purple stone monuments, one million purple galaxies—that was Su Ming's universe!

Tens of thousands of people knelt on the ground and worshiped him. Their shivers, their respect and fear, and all the other emotions could all be seen easily.

Su Ming stood in midair and stared at the cultivators calmly. He did not speak, and the sound of worship that lingered in the air for a long time echoed in his ears. The more time he spent being silent, the more suffocating and oppressive air covered the land. It was heavy and pressed on everyone's hearts, causing them to have difficulty breathing. Gradually, sweat broke out on their foreheads. The feeling as if life and death might be only a moment away, something they could not control became a powerful Brand that was left deep in their souls at that moment. Their respect towards Su Ming reached an unprecedented height, though no one could see it.

After a long while, Su Ming said faintly, "I am the master of this land."

When he said those words, the tens of thousands of people beneath him worshiped him together again. Their voices echoed in the air, and Su Ming spoke again with cold indifference,

"Do all of you... wish to go out?"

His words fell into everyone's ears, but no one dared to speak. All of them remained silent.

"I will give you some time. Perhaps it will be a few decades or a few centuries, but when I return... I will take all those who have reached the later stage of World Plane out of this place. They will be by my side and we will fight against the heavens, and I will... also bring them out of the Barren Lands of Divine Essence to wage war against the four Great True Worlds.

"Then... I will grant you your freedom and the glory you deserve!"

The impact from the words 'out of the Barren Lands of Divine Essence' and 'freedom' instantly shook the cultivators' hearts. They lifted their heads at the same time, and when they looked at Su Ming, there was an unrestrained desire shining in their eyes.

"Your ancestors were all in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. Entering my universe was your fortune. Train towards the later stage of World Plane Realm, because I... am the only one who can bring all of you out of the Barren Lands of Divine Essence in the most forthright manner!

"When I return, it will be the day where I will bring you out!"

Su Ming cast a glance at Zhou Kang and found that he had an apathetic look on his face. His expression as if his heart was already dead made Su Ming sigh in his heart. When he turned around, he took a step into the air and his body vanished. At the same time, a piercing purple light erupted from the one hundred thousand purple stone monuments in the place.

Beyond Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands, purple light seeped out of the countless cracks and illuminated the area, dyeing Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands in purple. At that moment, Su Ming calmly walked out from the crack.

His long hair returned to its normal color, changing from the previous gray. Su Ming might still be unable to completely control the changes in his emotions, but with the passing time he learned how to use his surroundings and the enemies he was facing to indirectly change his thoughts and emotions, thereby allowing his different personalities to show up.

At the instant he walked out of the crack leading to Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands, Zhu You Cai—who had been meditating with his eyes closed and did not pay any attention to the twenty thousand yellow and indigo long arcs that had rushed out—suddenly opened his eyes. When he looked at Su Ming, his pupils constricted, and the light of surprise showed up in his eyes.

"You became stronger," he said calmly. The strange light in his eyes became stronger, and he stood up slowly. Fighting spirit rose in his eyes. At that moment, he was clearly no longer Zhu You Cai, but the War Immortal Chang He.

"You have the presence of my divine ability on you... You should have copied that skill when you were in Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands... and while your presence might seem similar to mine, it contains a hidden primitive presence. It... is madness, ruthlessness, and seeks to destroy the universe!" The fighting spirit in Zhu You Cai's eyes gradually disappeared. When his eyes returned to normal, he cast a profound glance at Su Ming again, but did not speak anymore.

He was not the only one who noticed something different about Su Ming. Beside him, Flame Fiends' Progenitor's heart filled with fear. He had always regarded Su Ming with great respect before, but when he saw other than, his body started trembling. The mighty pressure coming from the young man actually caused him, an Almighty in Mastery Realm, to feel terror and fear.

It was as if there was a monstrous malice hidden in Su Ming's body. That malicious power wanted to destroy the universe, and it was spreading out a boundless pressure on all forms of life. Flame Fiends' Progenitor couldn't help but shudder at it, and when he looked at Su Ming, there was great wariness contained in his gaze.

If it was any other cultivator, perhaps they would not feel it so greatly. However, Flame Fiends' Progenitor was not any other cultivator. He was a member of an alien race, which was why his spiritual sense was much stronger than that of a cultivator who was at the same level as he. Because of that, he could see things that were hidden deeper.

'I could still fight against him in the past, but now... if he attacked with his full strength, I wonder how long I would be able to last...' Flame Fiends' Progenitor instinctively bent his back and put on a fawning expression towards Su Ming.

When the bald crane saw Su Ming, it sensed the least. It strutted over to Su Ming's side, and when it turned around, it had its head held high while casting a sideways glance at Flame Fiends Progenitor.

"I only obtained a small serendipity in Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands," Su Ming replied faintly. Once he swept his gaze past Zhu You Cai, he fixed his gaze on a distant galaxy. Over there... the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds were stationed.

A brilliant light shone in Su Ming's eyes.

"Baldy, do you want to retrieve your physical body?"

Pursuit of the Truth #Chapter 1042 Do You Really Want to Die? - Read Pursuit of the Truth Chapter 1042 Do You Really Want to Die?

Chapter 1042 Do You Really Want to Die?

The bald crane was holding itself in a smug manner, but the instant it heard Su Ming's words, it shuddered before turning around swiftly to look toward him.

"Let's go. In the past, I did not have enough power to help you retrieve your physical body, but now... I believe that I will be able to." There was no killing intent in Su Ming's gaze while he stared into the distant galaxy, just a strange and enchanting light.

He charged into the area ahead of him. At that moment, the bald crane no longer cared about quarrelling with Flame Fiends' Progenitor and hurried over to follow Su Ming.

"My physical body? Are you talking about my physical body?"

"Within the camp of the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World is half of your physical body," Su Ming said calmly while taking a step forward.

"Who has it?!" A fierce glare appeared in the bald crane's eyes.

"Huo Zhu !" Su Ming turned into a long arc and charged into the distance.

In the past, Wu Li Zi had used a green feather in hopes of luring the bald crane to the camp. That feather had been given to her by Huo Zhu, who was the person controlling her actions. Wu Li Zi had been threatened by Huo Zhu, which then resulted in the bald crane being lured to their camp. Huo Zhu's final goal was to unravel a certain mystery contained in the bald crane's physical body.

In the past, Su Ming might have already known all of it, but he could not enter the deeper parts of the True Worlds' camps in search of Huo Zhu. His level of cultivation was just not high enough, and he was forced out by the Almighty in Mastery Realm who appeared later on. He had only escaped disaster after running into Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands.

However, it could be said that the difference between the current Su Ming and his past self was like heaven and earth. Besides, he did not intend to use his power to win. He

had an even more persuasive thing that would allow him to enter the place—his status as a direct descendant of Morning Dao Sect, Dao Kong!

They charged forward with a whistle. Su Ming was in front, and the bald crane by his side. Zhu You Cai followed behind them, while Flame Fiends' Progenitor was the last. The group charged forward through the boundless galaxy, straight toward the place where the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds were stationed.

Time trickled by. With their speed, they had already shot through the endless galaxy in just one day and saw... the barrier formed by shattered stars which Su Ming had passed through in the past.

At the instant he saw the barrier, he brought up his right hand. The bald crane had been with him for many years, so it naturally understood what he intended to do. With one move, it immediately turned into a long arc that entered Su Ming's storage bag, and he took a step towards the barrier formed by the shattered stars.

A loud bang rang out. The sound might have billowed into the sky, but it did not stop Su Ming in his tracks. A rampaging force spread out from the Rune serving as a barrier, but at the moment it touched him, it turned gentle, and the Sacred Constellation Robe appeared on his body!

During that instant, he was no longer Su Ming, he had transformed into Dao Kong.

With the Sacred Constellation Robe, a head of black hair falling to his feet, a handsome face, and an awe-inspiring presence, Su Ming moved through the barrier with ease.

The barrier could prevent outsiders from entering and serve as an alarm. However, for Su Ming who had Possessed Dao Kong, the four Great True Worlds would naturally not start a hunt.

As for Zhu You Cai, at the moment the rampaging force touched him, it was as if he had turned into empty air. The rampaging force... did not seem to have noticed his presence, allowing him to calmly walk through the barrier.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor was the weakest, but he was, after all, an Almighty in Mastery Realm. There was no way he would be stopped by a Rune that had not been fully activated. At the instant the rampaging force came towards him, he let out a cold harrumph, and that force instantly tumbled backwards with a bang, allowing Flame Fiends' Progenitor to step into the territory where the forces of power from four Great True Worlds were stationed.

However, the instant he touched the Rune, all the Almighties stationed from the four Great True Worlds instantly noticed him.

When Su Ming initially arrived, they remained in isolation and continuing to be in deep sleep. He was strong, but in truth, he could not attract their attention.

However, the arrival of Flame Fiends' Progenitor was completely different. With his status of being an Almighty in Mastery Realm and his power, the instant he stepped through the barrier, three powerful presences stirred up a loud bang that surged into the heavens in the territory where the four Great True Worlds were stationed. It caused all the cultivators in the camp of True Sacred Yin World to become apprehensive, and the three presences rose swiftly from the depths of the ground.

In the blink of an eye, they turned into three wills in front of Su Ming. The galaxy trembled, and the three wills turned into three people. They allowed their vast presence as great as the universe to spread out without restraint. It was so strong that it caused the cultivators in True Sacred Yin World to tremble. When they looked towards the sky, zealousness and respect appeared on their faces. They knew that this was the presence that belonged to the True Saints stationed to keep watch over the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

"Progenitor Huo Kui, you've overstepped your boundaries!" Booming sounds came from one of the three people. It turned into a thunderous roar that rang out in all directions. As the voice spread out, a large amount of lightning swept through the area.

The person who spoke was an old man. He was a big and tall, and dressed in a long robe. His eyes looked to have lightning contained in them, which could make all those whose level of cultivation was not as great as his to feel their hearts and minds breaking down at the instant they stared into them.

The two people standing beside him were a man and woman. They appeared to be middle-aged, but their power and the feeling of time from their presences made it clear that they were old monsters that had been alive for an unknown amount of time.

The first one they looked towards was Flame Fiends' Progenitor, then Zhu You Cai, and only then at Su Ming.

When they saw Flame Fiends' Progenitor, their expressions remained normal, but when they saw Zhu You Cai, their pupils shrank in a barely noticeable manner. Zhu You Cai might have seemed as if he was only in Mastery Realm, but the feedback provided to them by the Rune told them that Flame Fiends Progenitor alone was in Mastery Realm. To the Almighties who had lived for umpteenth years, it was obvious that something was off.

If this peculiarity had happened about someone who was not an Almighty, it would not have caught their attention, but if when it was regarding an Almighty, then this peculiarity... would signify variance.

It caused the three of them to be unable to help themselves but think of many things. Zhu You Cai's composure had also forced them to pay special attention to him.

On the other hand, the three of them only swept their gazes past Su Ming before automatically overlooking him. A cultivator in Lunar Kalpa Realm simply did not deserve their attention. Besides, they naturally knew Su Ming's identity from the Rune.

"My fellow Daoists, I wonder what is the meaning behind your journey to True Sacred Yin World's camp? And you even brought along a direct descendant from True Morning Dao World's Morning Dao Sect!" The old man with lightning spreading out of his entire body had a freezing glare. When he looked towards Huo Kui and Zhu You Cai, he completely ignored Su Ming.

Zhu You Cai did not speak. As for Flame Fiends' Progenitor, he only chuckled. With Su Ming around, he felt that there was no need for him to greet those three people. After all, this was the main camp that belonged to the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds stationed in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. Besides, he was also making his guesses regarding Su Ming's connection with the people present.

With a calm look on his face, Su Ming also did not spare the trio even a single glance. He simply walked forward.

However, his act of walking forward caused displeasure to the Almighty from True Sacred Yin World. The old man did not say much, his gaze still fixed on Hou Kui and Zhu You Cai, but the middle-aged woman beside him smiled faintly.

"Morning Dao Sect's brat, this isn't the camp of True Morning Dao World. It's not some place where you can come and go as you please. Go and wait by the side until the people from True Morning Dao World can come to pick you up."

Su Ming did not seem to have heard her and continued walking forward. In other people's eyes, the three people were superior Almighties and True Saints, but in Su Ming's eyes, killing them was easy.

The middle-aged woman, who was not too fond of True Morning Dao World in the first place, frowned. While the four Great True Worlds might have seemed connected, there was ceaseless internal strife among them. The hostility, however, was not so bad that they would kill a direct descendant from another world when there was no necessity, especially one of such status. Besides, the three of them were not the only ones to have sensed the Rune. The Almighties from True Morning Dao World would have definitely noticed the new arrivals the moment Su Ming stepped through the barrier as well. By then, they might already be hurrying over, but it was not impossible for them to teach the disrespectful boy a lesson about respecting his elders.

She raised her right hand and pointed towards Su Ming.

"Then let me teach you the price of disrespecting your seniors on behalf of the elders in your family."

At the instant the woman pointed to him with her right index finger, Su Ming turned his head around and cast a cold glare her way. "So noisy, are you asking for death?"

While his voice was still echoing in space, he disappeared. When he reappeared, he was already in front of the woman. He raised his right hand, and with a calm look on his face, slapped her.

A loud smack rose into the air. The middle-aged woman coughed up a mouthful of blood. Many of her teeth were shattered by the slap. As she fell back, her left cheek instantly swelled up. Disbelief appeared in her eyes, but she did not have time to be angry before her expression turned into one of shock. She saw Su Ming's action just then, but did not manage to dodge. It was not that Su Ming was fast, but that the instant he looked at her, a loud bang had rang out in her mind, and she lost all her senses.

The old man beside her had whipped his head around and stared fixedly at Su Ming. There was a grim look and an expression of shock that had never appeared before on his face.

The middle-aged man beside them sucked in a sharp breath. When he looked towards Su Ming, his gaze was filled with shock. He also saw that strike, which was definitely not a divine ability that a person in Lunar Kalpa Realm could execute.

"Detain these three here. Injuring them will do. We'll let them keep their lives for now," Su Ming said flatly.

"Those who dare disrespect my master should indeed have their mouths struck!" The wild and arrogant words from Flame Fiends' Progenitor reverberated in the air. He then charged towards the trio.

With a relaxed expression on his face, Zhu You Cai raised his right hand to seize the empty space in front of him. Immediately, the galaxy roared, and the expressions of the trio changed drastically. As they moved back together, the galaxy around them distorted as if it had been sealed and completely locked away.

"Master? You..." The middle-aged woman's expression changed again. The other two acted the same. Loud bangs rang out in their heads. This was a title they had never imagined Flame Fiends' Progenitor using to address Dao Kong.

What caused them to be in even more shock was that Zhu You Cai's casual grip had completely sealed the three of them in that galaxy. To the middle-aged man and woman, that power and that divine ability was definitely something that did not belong to those in Mastery Realm. It... was Fate Realm!

However, the old man did not believe so. His pupils shrank drastically. When he looked towards Zhu You Cai, terror appeared in his eyes. When he turned his head around and looked towards Su Ming, his shock became even greater.

Su Ming, who had obtained the fifth kiln and absorbed Ecang's soul, was the strongest person in the entire Divine Essence Star Ocean and the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. He could be as wilful as he wanted.

The strong ruled. If a person had enough power and did not have any yokes on his shoulders hindering him, then forget any Almightyies, even if he wanted to wreak havoc throughout the entire Barren Lands of Divine Essence and slaughter all lives in there, it would just be a matter of wanting to do it to him.

The middle-aged man forced down the shock in his heart and immediately said, "Dao Kong, what exactly do you want to do? This is True Sacred Yin World. As a direct descendant of True Morning Dao World, if you break into our camp, then you must provide an explanation for your actions to True Sacred Yin-"

"Do you really want to die?" Su Ming turned his head around and stared at the middle-aged man with a serious gaze.

The middle-aged man's heart trembled. It were the same words as before. He trembled, but just as he was about to say something, the old man by his side let out a low shout.

"Shut up!" The old man's words were directed to the middle-aged man, and immediately after, he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed deeply towards Su Ming. "Fellow Daoist, if you have any personal grudges against someone in True Sacred Yin World, then we will definitely not stop you!"

The old man forced down the shivers in his heart and the rarely seen fear that had risen in his body. He could already tell that the plump person was not in Fate Realm... but Life Realm!

So how terrifying would be a person who could make a person in Life Realm follow him willingly? He did not dare to think about it!

1. Huo Zhu: The one who has a grudge against Su Ming and had given permission for the True Guards to use the bald crane's feathers to wait for Su Ming to appear from Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands the first time. Has a grudge against the bald crane.

2. Wu Li Zi: Says she's friends with the bald crane, but also seems to hate him.

Chapter 1043 So What If I Destroy a World?!

"We will definitely not bother you in the least. Please release the seal on us, and I will personally lead you to the person who has offended you!" The old man wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed deeply.

He did not underestimate Su Ming because he seemed young. In this universe where the strong ruled, the Dao Kong before him no longer had to show any hint of his power. The feat of having an Almighty in Mastery Realm as his follower was already something very shocking... much less when that Almighty was in Life Realm!

Besides, through that slap just then, his personal strength was enough to make the old man apprehensive. At that moment, the middle-aged man and woman beside him also made plenty of connections in their minds. With complicated expressions on their faces, they became sombre.

If the person in front of them was not Dao Kong or a direct descendant of Morning Dao Sect, then even if he had come from the four Great True Worlds, the three of them would not be so wary of him. After all, even if Su Ming and the rest were strong, they had stronger people in the four Great True Worlds.

However... he was Dao Kong. He was a direct descendant from True Morning Dao World's Morning Dao Sect. This status alone cut off most of the tactics the old man and the other two could use against him.

Su Ming turned his head around and cast the old man a look before nodding. Zhu You Cai looked as calm as ever. He lifted his right hand and swung his arm forward. Immediately, the restraining seals immediately disappeared without a trace, allowing the three to regain their mobility. The old man bowed again towards Su Ming. This time, the man and woman beside him also wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed to him. Their expressions were vastly different from the faint arrogant and conceited looks moments ago.

"I want to look for Huo Zhu," Su Ming said flatly.

Once those words left his mouth, the old man's gaze focused back on him. He turned his head back to look at the middle-aged woman beside him. He was not the only one, the middle-aged man cast a sideways glance at her too.

At the instant the middle-aged woman heard Su Ming's words, she immediately became confused. When she saw her companions looking towards her, her expression changed slightly before she sighed.

"Might I know how my junior sister has offended you?"

"She took something she should not have," Su Ming replied calmly.

"Oh? This is easy. I will have her deliver what you need to you. Might I know what it is?" the middle-aged woman immediately asked.

"Once I see Huo Zhu, she will naturally know what is the specific thing I want." Su Ming's eyes gradually turned icy cold.

The middle-aged woman fell silent. Once she nodded, she turned into a long arc that charged into the distance. Su Ming's expression remained the same. He took a step forward and followed behind her. With an extremely quick speed, the group rushed into the True Sacred Yin World's base within an instant. As they charged forward, Su Ming saw the spiral-shaped Radix Planets and others around him, and the scenes from the past rose in his head.

This was the second time he come there. There was a relaxed air around him compared to the first time. His power was also vastly different from before. Besides, this time, he had in his hands complete dominance over the situation.

Soon, Su Ming saw the farthest he'd went back then, which was the planet where Wu Li Zi was located. They moved past it, and as the middle-aged woman continued guiding them forward, gradually, a vast vortex appeared in front of Su Ming.

That vortex spun with loud, rumbling sounds, looking incomparably radiant. If anyone observed it carefully, they would be able to tell that the vast vortex was formed by planets.

"Huo Zhu, what exactly did you take that you should not have?! Open the Rune and let us in!" At the instant they closed in on the vast vortex, the middle-aged man spoke up. Her voice reverberated in all directions and entered the vast vortex like a buzz.

The old man's expression changed. He turned his head around to glare at the middle-aged woman. The middle-aged man also could not resist the change in his expression.

That kind of straightforward manner of speech was clearly telling Huo Zhu that someone had come seeking for her and was also an indication that she should prepare herself.

That scene caused the old man's expression to change continuously, until he finally opened his mouth and growled at the vortex formed by the planets.

"Huo Zhu, open the Rune. This matter is incredibly important. I want you... to immediately open the Rune!"

The old man's voice reverberated in space and traveled into the vortex, but he did not receive any sort of reply.

Within the vortex was a planet where the land was a desert. Numerous cultivators had prostrated themselves on the ground and crawled forward with great difficulty. Their goal was a palace located in the distance.

At that moment, it was quiet in the palace. There was a table in it, and on it was a lit candle. The fire swayed, and the faces of all lives flashed through it. As that light swayed and the faces in it changed, half of an ancient book under the candle unfurled.

Within the fire and among the faces of all manners of lives was a woman's face. There was an aloof look in her eyes. She lifted her head to look at the area above her before closing her eyes and ignoring the voices.

Beyond the planets and beyond the vortex, the old man's expression grew dark. He was just about to turn his head to offer an explanation when Su Ming smiled. It was cold and dark, and contained a heinous killing intent that was about to erupt from him. The thought of destroying the entire camp where the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World were stationed was not a difficult matter for him. He could do it with just one thought.

"Huo Kui, blast apart that vortex, and search through all the planets until we find that person called Huo Zhu."

When Flame Fiends' Progenitor heard this, a glint shone in his eyes. A loud bang shot up from his body, and immediately, a purple sea of fire erupted within him and tumbled forward in all directions. He then took a step towards the vortex formed by planets, stretched out his arms, and swung them forward. Immediately, the sea of fire around him tumbled about and charged towards the vortex.

Booming sounds surged into the sky and shook the entire galaxy, deafening all the cultivators in True Sacred Yin World's camp. In shock, they flew out from where they had been, and in the blink of an eye, tens of thousands of long arcs rushed out into the galaxy to charge towards this vortex.

The old man was anxious, but a cold sneer appeared on the middle-aged woman's lips. She would not have cared if Dao Kong wanted to cause trouble to others, but Huo Zhu was her junior sister. There was no way she could let him succeed. What she needed was for Su Ming to act in a forceful manner. There were plenty of cultivators in the planets within the vortex. All of them had extraordinary power, but more importantly, there lived the old fellows who were acting as garrison.

With them around, the boy from Morning Dao Sect would certainly not be allowed to cause trouble.

The vortex was formed by countless planets, and each one had an individual Rune. If it was not released from within, then no outsider could step into the planet. An outsider would need to blast away the Rune to be able to enter.

This was to give absolute protection to all those who had earned the right to stay there.

After all, there were four of the vortices of planets within the camps belonging to the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds... and each of them were where all the key forces of each True World were located.

A purple sea of fire attacked the whole vortex. The instant it touched it, booming sounds shook the galaxy. The faces of the tens of thousands of cultivators who had come turned pale, and all of them retreated.

The old Almighty had a look full of anguish while he sighed, but he was laughing coldly in his heart. He did not warn the middle-aged woman regarding Zhu You Cai. Since she insisted on provoking someone she should not even after he'd tried to stop her several times, her survival no longer had anything to do with him.

As for the middle-aged woman, the cold sneer on her lips became even darker and more sinister. At that moment, there was fiery pain on her face as she longed to kill Su Ming.

Among the three of them, the middle-aged man was the calmest. First of all, he could not tell Zhu You Cai's level of cultivation, so he did not have the old man's anxiety. Second, Huo Zhu was not his junior sister, so her survival had nothing to do with him. As for Su Ming, the middle-aged man was rather eager to see how he would handle the situation once he lured out the old monsters.

The trio each harbored their own thoughts. However, none of them expected that if they blew it out of proportion, then what awaited them would be a real catastrophe, that the forces of power stationed in True Sacred Yin World would be... completely annihilated.

The devastation was still brewing. If everything went smoothly, then perhaps it would not happen, but if it did not go smoothly... then to Su Ming, it was not impossible to destroy the whole galaxy.

At the instant Flame Fiends' Progenitor sent the purple sea of fire towards the vortex of planets and booming sounds reverberated in all directions, shocking the tens of thousands of cultivators in the area, a cold harrumph came from the vortex.

The moment Su Ming heard that sound, a barely noticeable glint shone in his eyes. He was rather familiar with that sound. It belonged to the Almighty in Mastery Realm who had pursued him until he reached Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands!

There was anger contained in that sound, along with a cold tone that chilled a person to the bones. The moment it appeared, it was as if a cold gust of wind had risen in the galaxy. When it touched the purple sea of fire in an unseen manner, it looked as if a violent gust of wind had come upon it, threatening to extinguish. Flame Fiends' Progenitor lifted his head then and roared. A purple sea of fire erupted from his body

once more, turning into a gigantic hand of flames. When it stretched out, it was big as the vortex of planets, and it pushed down on it!

"This place... isn't a place where you can cause trouble as you please. Even if you are a direct descendant from True Morning Sect... you will still have to immediately leave!"

A cold and dark voice reached everyone's ears. At that moment, a palm... that was just as huge appeared in the vortex. It crashed against the palm of flames summoned by Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

Booming sounds caused the galaxy to tremble as if it was about to be torn apart. The expression of Flame Fiends' Progenitor changed, and he took a few staggering steps back. He might also be in Mastery Realm, but he had not completed it. When he moved back, the final word from the cold voice in the vortex reverberated in space, turning into endless echoes that shook the universe.

Su Ming smiled. This was the second time he had smiled after he came to the camp that belonged to the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World. There was a malicious air to his smile. He would not give them a third chance. If True Sacred Yin World continued acting in that way, then when he smiled for the third time... he would destroy their whole galaxy!

By his side, Zhu You Cai sighed. With a single move, he reached the vortex of planets. He might not have been acquainted with Su Ming for a long time, but he still knew more than anyone else present, especially about what Su Ming's smile signified. He knew its meaning, and he also knew that with the fifth kiln in possession, he was a formidable opponent. Even when Zhu You Cai was at the peak of his condition, he would still need to be incredibly wary of him, and that went even more for the people around them.

And no matter what... he was still from True Sacred Yin World, which was why without even needing Su Ming to order him, he walked out.

"Open the Rune, we will only take a single person."

At the instant Zhu You Cai walked forward and approached the place, he had his true power erupt from his body. When it took shape, the galaxy roared, and all the people's expressions changed drastically.

Chapter 1044 The Third Time He Smiled

At the instant the power belonging to Life Realm spread out, the galaxy instant trembled with a loud rumble, causing the tens upon thousands of cultivators in the area to have their expressions change drastically. Their hearts trembled simultaneously, as if there was an invisible hammer striking fiercely at their hearts, causing the tens upon

thousands of people to be shocked. Their cultivation bases also seemed as if they had been completely suppressed. Their minds roared, and they were completely blank.

The old man was in a better state. At that moment, his face was pale, but he was still composed. After all, he had already guessed Zhu You Cai's level of cultivation before this. At that moment, this was just proving his guess correct.

However, the middle-aged man by the side had an expression of disbelief on his face. His eyes were blank, and his mind roared, as if there were thousands of thunder cracking in his head at the same time. Normal cultivators might not be able know the meaning of Life Realm, because in their eyes, becoming Masters of Fate, Lives, and Death was just reaching a Realm, and even Su Ming himself only managed to slowly figure out the detailed categorizations much later after he learned about the Masters of Fate, Lives and Death.

Yet as an Almighty in Mastery Realm, even though he had just reached this Realm, this middle-aged man's understanding towards Life Realm was clearly much greater than the tens upon thousands of cultivators around him.

Ignorance is bliss, this was an ancient proverb. It meant that if a person did not know of the terrors about a certain thing, then they would not be afraid of it. Even though it was a rather one-sided view of things, but there was also some form of logic in it. On the other hand, the more someone understood the terrors of a certain matter, the more afraid they would be of it. This was boundlessly magnified on the middle-aged man at that moment.

While he trembled, great astonishment and shock appeared in his eyes. He came to understand swiftly why the old man by his side tried so many times to stop the middle-aged woman from provoking this group of people. If a person could make an Almighty in Life Realm follow him willingly, then even if it was not because of his power that made that Almighty be his follower, it was still enough to make a person shocked and make all powerful warriors to regard him with great important.

He also came to understand swiftly that Su Ming's threat of asking them whether they were seeking death were not just empty words. He... had his own methods of carrying out his threat.

If he was already in such a state of shock, then it was even more so for the middle-aged woman who caused all of this. This woman might be an Almighty in Mastery Realm, but just like the middle-aged man, she had just reached that Realm, and she could not be considered to have reached completion in Mastery Realm. At that moment, the woman shivered, and terror as well as disbelief appeared in her eyes. A billowing storm raged in her mind, and a great, ominous feeling instantly submerged her heart like a tidal wave.

She turned her head around in anguish and looked towards the old man by her side. When she saw that the old man was rather composed and was only looking at her with

a complicated gaze, there was in no way that the woman would not know why he had been trying to stop her previously. However... everything was already too late. She already notified her junior sister, causing something that should have been simple to become more complicated... and become even more dangerous.

But that woman refused to admit to her fault. A brilliant light shone in her eyes. So what if this person was an Almighty in Life Realm? It was not as if... there was no Almighties in Life Realm among the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds stationed here!!

Based on what she knew, at the core of the vortex of planets was one of the Progenitors from True Sacred Yin World. This person had already not appeared for a long period of time and had always been in isolation to train. Besides major events linked to the place's survival or a powerful enemy so strong that the others could not fight against appearing, this person would not come out of isolation.

There was an old monster like this existing within the each of the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds stationed here. They were the strongest defense left here by the four Great True Worlds in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. Because of it, they could control the Barren Lands of Divine Essence to its utmost possible limit.

Unless... an Almighty in Death Realm appeared in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. However, those in Life Realm from the four Great True Worlds only numbered to nearly about a dozen people. As for Almighties in Death Realm, they were even more scarce in number. Those people were already at the level of Kalpa Lords from each true world, and they were existences that were only second to the True Progenitors. There were less than ten of them.

Under the limitations set on the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, it was impossible for a person here to arrive in this Realm, which was already very difficult to reach in the first place. Even if that person truly appeared, several Almighties in Death Realm would immediately come forth from the four Great True Worlds to directly attack, kill, or seal him.

Which was why the middle-aged woman still believed that she would be able to escape unscathed by a stroke of luck.

Zhu You Cai sent his power outwards. As his words reverberated in the air, the old man's voice from the vortex of planets instantly disappeared. After a long while, when the vortex rotated about, an old man dressed in a long robe made of sackcloth walked out.

The old man's expression was grim. When he walked out, he instantly trained his gaze on Zhu You Cai before he wrapped his fist in his palm and bowed to him.

"Senior, with your power, might I know just who you are searching for from this place," the old man raised his head and said slowly.

"Huo Zhu," Zhu You Cai did not want things to let things escalate to a point where there was no turning back and said with a low voice.

The old man waited for a moment. When he saw that Huo Zhu did not take the initiative to come forth from the vortex of planets, he frowned slightly and spoke to Zhu You Cai, "This is the main camp of the forces of power from the four Great True Worlds stationed in this place. All the people who stay here have complete freedom to do whatever they want. It is not convenient for me to interfere too much. Since this person does not want to appear, then please leave and do not disrupt True Sacred Yin World's peace."

A brilliant light shone in Zhu You Cai's eyes when he heard these words. He believed that he had already given enough consideration to the people in this place. If it was not because he was a member of True Sacred Yin World in the past, he would not have bothered about this. When he saw the old man before him saying such words, he could not help but let out a cold harrumph and took a step forward.

The old man in a long robe made of sackcloth turned his body sideways and did not even stop him. He too, knew that with his power, he had no right to stop this Almighty in Life Realm before his eyes, but this... was the main camp of the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World stationed in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. When he moved back, the old man had a calm expression on his face, and there was not a hint of change in emotion on him.

As Zhu You Cai approached the vortex, he brought his right hand up and seized the space in the direction of the vortex of planets before him. With it, the vortex trembled with a bang. The sound was so loud that it reverberated to all directions, causing the galaxy to have endless ripples appear while it shuddered.

Boom!

While the vortex and the galaxy shuddered, Zhu You Cai raised his arms, and as if he was tearing apart space, he tore at the vortex with a fierce yang. With it, the tremors in the galaxy grew even more intense. Countless planets trembled, and a vast layer of fog shot out. A gigantic crack appeared swiftly in the galaxy with a vicious rip. When it swept past, it looked as if it wanted to tear the vortex into half.

His power in Life Realm spilled out without him holding back any of it. It filled all the corners in the galaxy, causing the countless planets in the vortex to tremble furiously and shocking awake plenty of the people who were in isolation. The desert on the planet where Huo Zhu was located trembled. The sky was in chaos. The lamp in the hall swayed viciously to reveal a woman's face. With a dark expression on her face, her eyes sparkled, and a cold sneer appeared on the corners of her lips.

"You overestimate yourself. So what if you are in Life Realm? If this was the world outside, then I would definitely die, but this is True Sacred Yin World's main camp. The laws in this land say that if I don't want to go out, then no one can force me to leave.

"If I am forced to leave this place, then all of True Sacred Yin World's dignity will be shamed. If the Rune in the vortex is ripped apart, then all of True Sacred Yin World's dignity will still be shamed. To a true world, their dignity is incredibly important!

"As long... as I don't go out, no one can do anything to me!"

At the moment the woman's sullen face in the candle flame laughed coldly, she immediately heard an ancient voice travelling into all directions slowly from the depths of the vortex of planets to spread out of the vortex. At the moment she heard the voice, the cold sneer on her lips became greater.

"You now have your consciousness formed, but your body is yet to be. You can be considered to half of an associate of mine in Life Realm... Since you must have experienced much difficulty in your path in cultivation... and on account of our past... I will not pursue the matter of you breaking into True Sacred Yin World's main camp... leave." The old voice sounded as if its owner had not spoken in many years. The words were lacking slightly in fluency, and there was an endless, ancient air in them. When it travelled into space, it caused all the people who heard it to feel as if time was flowing away from that voice. Along with that voice came a misconception that made them feel as if all their blood, essence, and even their life force as well as cultivation base was about to wither.

It was especially so for Zhu You Cai. His body trembled swiftly, and a complicated look appeared in his eyes. That person had clearly recognized him, and he had also recognized the person who said those words. That belonged to one of his elders in True Sacred Yin World.

In his silence, a brilliant light shone in Zhu You Cai's eyes. He did not retreat, but instead moved forward and charged towards the vortex of planets.

"I am only going to retrieve a person today. If you don't open the Rune, I will not leave!"

However, at the moment Zhu You Cai approached the vortex of planets, a sigh travelled out of the vortex, and what appeared immediately after was a propelling force that brought it with a supreme, mighty pressure. With a bang, it landed on Zhu You Cai. Zhu You Cai shuddered and took a few staggering steps back. The area around his body immediately distorted, and a gigantic circle of light instantly enveloped his body completely, as if he had been sealed and had turned into a bubble floating in the galaxy.

"Kill the one in Mastery Realm, chase away the one in Life Realm, disable... the boy from Morning Dao Sect as a warning to others!" When that old voice appeared again, a

mocking smile appeared on the middle-aged woman's face. She took a step forward and charged towards Su Ming.

The middle-aged man by her side also sighed in relief in his heart. With a calm expression, he too, approached Su Ming.

The old man in the long robe made of sackcloth and the old man who managed to deduce Zhu You Cai's level of cultivation fell silent. One of them took a step forward towards the Flame Fiends' Progenitor, and the other walked towards Su Ming.

When the bound Zhu You Cai saw this, he sighed softly. He saw the malicious smile appear the third time on Su Ming's lips, and he closed his eyes.

At that moment, the tens upon thousands of cultivators around the area had hostile expressions on their faces. They might not have showed themselves, the they had surrounded the area to form a large Rune to isolate them. As they circled around the area, the Rune started roaring and turned into a powerful propelling force intending to sweep up the trapped Su Ming and the Flame Fiends' Progenitor and shift them out of the camp where the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World was stationed.

Several gigantic Radix Planets also drifted over from the perimeter at that moment. The light from them reached hundreds upon thousands of feet. Terrifying presences spread out from them. This was True Sacred Yin World activating all of their power accumulated in their camp. With this power around and without Zhu You Cai's help, it would seem... like they were capable of killing Su Ming and the Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

There was not even the slightest hint of fear on the Flame Fiends' Progenitor. Instead, he started laughing coldly. When an elated expression appeared on his face, the smile on Su Ming's face grew wider.

"If that's the case... then one of the four forces of power stationed in this place should disappear." Su Ming brought up his right hand and pointed swiftly at the galaxy above him. With it, his long hair swiftly changed color and turned crimson red. Red light shone in his eyes, and a heinous, murderous aura erupted swiftly from Su Ming's body with a bang.

As the murderous aura erupted from him. The galaxy above them shuddered furiously during that instant as well. An invisible force from space pressed down swiftly on the ground with a loud rumble!

The galaxy shuddered. As rumbles shook the sky, the Almighty's in the land had their expressions change drastically in a manner that had never happened to them before, and then, in the galaxy... a corner of the fifth kiln appeared!!

Chapter 1045 His Highness, Dao Kong!

"This is..."

"The fifth kiln! That's impossible. Why... Why is the fifth kiln here?"

The expression of the old man who had chased after Su Ming and forced him to flee into Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands with the power of one palm in the past changed drastically. His body also started trembling furiously. There was no way he would not recognize the fifth kiln. It was a phenomenon hailed as one of the greatest mysteries that had existed in Divine Essence Star Ocean for a long time. It was an item he had seen with his own eyes in the past and which he'd only escaped by a hair's breadth after obtaining a serendipity within—an item he regarded as something incredibly sacred in his heart!

The old man had a supreme treasure in his hands that he rarely used, only taking it out when he ran into extremely major events. That supreme treasure... was what he had obtained from the fifth kiln.

He wasn't the only one who reacted like that, though. The other three people beside him also looked as if they were suffocating while staring at the galaxy above them in shock. Their faces were pale with disbelief. It was the most unimaginable thing they had experienced in all their lives, up to the point that they were so shocked that they could not describe what was going on.

The old man who had deduced Zhu You Cai's level of cultivation was pale-faced. He then started laughing brokenly. Only at that moment had he come to a realization that he had still underestimated Dao Kong. He thought that having an Almighty in Mastery Realm obey him and another Almighty in Life Realm as his follower would mean that he would have something exalted about himself, but he did not expect that there was more to than that. It was actually... absolute power. It... was being invincible in the universe!

The middle-aged man had thought that it had nothing to do with him and intended to be an onlooker and watch the fun by the side. But at that moment, he shuddered and his breathing quickened. He had also... seen the fifth kiln before, but he had only seen it from the distance, not having the courage to step inside. Instead, he had retreated at the time.

But he had still seen the fifth kiln and saw how it stood tall in the universe. Right then, the awe and fear he'd experienced when it let out the sea of fire that even Divine Essence Star Ocean had to regard as a disaster rose within from the bottom of his heart.

Yet the person with the most ghastly expression was still the middle-aged woman. All blood had drained from her face, and panic as well as great regret and fear filled her eyes. Everything that had happened had a great connection with her. If she had not

warned Huo Zhu, she would not have stirred up Su Ming's desire to destroy the galaxy. If she had not acted presumptuously, then... the scene of the fifth kiln descending would not have occurred.

A loud bang rang out in the woman's head. As her body trembled, she took a few staggering steps back. Her eyes lost their focus. Not even in her dreams would she have expected that the weakest among the trio would actually be Huo Kui who was in Mastery Realm, and the strongest was not the currently sealed Almighty in Life Realm. Instead, it was Dao Kong... who by then had crimson hair and a murderous aura that radiated off of him!

Compared to the Almighties whose expressions changed drastically, the tens of thousands of cultivators around the area mostly looked perplexed. With their levels of cultivation, they might have heard about the fifth kiln or read about it in some ancient books detailing Divine Essence Star Ocean, but none of them had ever personally witnessed it.

Which was why when they saw a corner of the gigantic kiln appear in the galaxy and sensed its mighty pressure that caused their hearts to tremble... they still charged towards Su Ming.

The instructions from the person with the most sublime status in the main camp was to them the greatest order.

"Scatter in haste!"

A low roar with a force that could make people to tremble came in a hurry from the vortex in the planet. It belonged to the most powerful Almighty in the land who had sealed Zhu You Cai and ordered to kill Huo Kui as well as incapacitate Su Ming!

Booming sounds surged into the heavens from the vortex of planets. Six planets rushed out in an instant. When they dashed out, they turned into six figures that charged towards the group.

"This is just a misunderstanding! Fellow Daoist, please calm down!"

The old voice swiftly spoke again, tumbling out from the mouth of a middle-aged man leading the group of six. He... was the person who had sealed Zhu You Cai and was the strongest person in that place. At that moment, his heart was thrown into great turmoil. He had absolutely not expected that the direct descendant from Morning Dao Sect... could summon the fifth kiln.

There were men and women among the five following behind him, and all of them were Almighties in Fate Realm. However, at that moment, their expressions were ugly. They could not hide the shock and astonishment.

They were all Mighties from True Sacred Yin Realm stationed in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence acting as garrisons fending against the galaxy.

The ten of them rarely appeared at the same time... unless the alien races from Divine Essence Star Ocean invaded. But when the fifth kiln descended, they could no longer care about anything else in the mid of their shock. The greater their level of cultivation was, the more they knew about the terrors of the fifth kiln... and all of them had gone to it before to obtain a supreme treasure.

The universe changed its color. The six's previous air of supremacy instantly turned into panic, and all of this... was because Su Ming had called down the fifth kiln upon them.

"A misunderstanding?" The crimson-haired Su Ming had a bloodthirsty smile at the corners of his lips. "Sealing my War Immortal was a misunderstanding?"

Su Ming lifted his right hand into the air and pointed at the incoming six long arcs. Immediately, the fifth kiln above released a vast and mighty pressure. It spread in all directions with loud booming sounds, making the galaxy look as if it was about to collapse. It shuddered, and countless galactical cracks formed everywhere. Then, like sharp blades, they swept through the area.

This was the sign of the galaxy about to collapse because it was unable to withstand the force of the fifth kiln descending.

A large amount of cracks swept through the area, causing the speed of five people to slow down, but eyes of the middle-aged man right at front shone with a light at that moment, and with a bang, he rushed out, moved around the galactical cracks, and rushed towards Su Ming.

As long as he killed Su Ming... then everything would naturally be resolved!

"Injuring my follower was also a misunderstanding?"

There was a crazed lilt to Su Ming's voice. When it reverberated in the area, the faces of the tens of thousands of cultivators turned pale. Their bodies were almost crushed under the mighty pressure. Some of people with lower levels of cultivation let out shrill screams of pain, and with a bang, their bodies were torn apart, their blood and flesh scattering in all directions.

"Trying to disable me is also the misunderstanding you spoke of?"

As Su Ming laughed, the strongest Progenitor, the Almighty in Life Realm who had sealed Zhu You Cai closed in. When they were a thousand feet away from each other, he lifted his right hand. Killing intent flashed in his eyes and he pushed his palm in Su Ming's direction through space.

The galaxy trembled. At the instant the middle-aged man pushed his palm forward, an indistinct outline appeared around Su Ming. That outline... was of a much smaller fifth kiln. The middle-aged man's palm then crashed into it.

With a bang, the fifth kiln's outline trembled, but it did not break. Su Ming was completely unharmed within, but the middle-aged man's expression changed, and he moved several steps back. When he lifted his head, there was anguish and disbelief on his face.

"The cultivators here wanted to kill me just now, but this is also a misunderstanding, right? That strike of yours is part of that misunderstanding you spoke of too, no doubt."

Su Ming licked his lips. His bloodthirst became even clearer, and when he raised his right hand to swing it forward, a loud bang resounded in space. A monstrous sea of fire erupted from the fifth kiln in the galaxy above. The color was purple right off the bat, which was the fire that even Almighties in Mastery Realm would have to face with caution. At the slightest carelessness, their forms and spirits would be destroyed!

The purple sea of fire tumbled outwards with loud rumbles. This was the first time the fire from the fifth kiln burned in an area beyond Divine Essence Star Ocean. In the past, the disaster was only limited to over there. It was the first time it had appeared beyond Divine Essence Star Ocean's borders!

No matter how quick the tens of thousands of cultivators in the area were, they could not outrun the tumbling fires from the fifth kiln. In an instant, nearly ten thousand cultivators were submerged, and before they even had the time to scream, they were reduced to ashes. They were burned completely, and their forms as well as their spirits were destroyed!

The flames that were known as a catastrophe by those in Divine Essence Star Ocean... could easily kill all the cultivators!

Nearly ten thousand of them died. As dense flames from the sea of fire roared, killing intent rose in the eyes of the ten Almighties in the area, especially those of the strongest Almighty in Life Realm. He glared at Su Ming, and a strong wave of regret rose in his heart.

"Dao Kong, those people had no grudges nor harbored any animosity towards you, yet you..."

"No grudges or animosity? If a vicious dog shows malice to me, then I will definitely strike it down. If a poisonous snake bares its poisonous fangs at me, I will crush it.

"There is no way that I would let people who wanted to kill me just moments ago leave unscathed after they failed in killing me. Today... I will destroy this world. I will... kill all the people in this land!"

Su Ming brought his hands up and swung his arms. The galaxy roared as the fifth kiln descended completely. The gigantic treasure brought with it a suffocating mighty pressure which spread forth through the sea of fire that burned the universe. The instant of descent... brought a disaster and a nightmare to all the people in the land!

"Dao Kong, does True Morning Dao World really want to go to war against True Sacred Yin World?" the middle-aged man roared, and the ancient air in his voice morphed into powerful killing intent.

"Go to war? Then... we will go to war!"

The crimson-haired Su Ming laughed loudly. With a swing of his right arm, the sea of fire tumbled with a loud roar.

The Almightyies retreated. The alarm and fear on their faces was something that could be rarely seen on them.

The planets collapsed and exploded into pieces. The Radix Planets might have contained terrifying power, but compared to the fifth kiln, they were so frail that they could not even withstand a single blow. All of them exploded!

"Tai An Yin, since all of you Almightyies from True Morning Dao World have arrived and seen this, then True Morning Dao World will have to suffer the consequences for thi!" the middle-aged man roared towards the heavens. Veins popped up on his face.

"If anyone tries to stop me, I will destroy their world too!"

Su Ming raised his right foot and took a swift step forward. The sea of fire let out a loud bang. As it tumbled about, the light from the fifth kiln reached one hundred thousand feet. With just one thought, Su Ming could make all the life forms within the fifth kiln descend.

A sigh came from space, then a voice said with a trace of respect, "Your Highness, we will obey your orders with great caution. We will definitely not take any action."

"Your Highness? You... You aren't an ordinary member of Morning Dao Sect!" The expression of the middle-aged man from True Sacred Yin World changed swiftly. He looked towards Su Ming, his heart in shock once more.

"Of course His Highness Dao Kong is not an ordinary member of Morning Dao Sect. He is one of the ten heirs that our Kalpa Lord from True Morning Dao World has designated!" A woman's cold harrumph came from space. Su Ming was familiar with this voice. It belonged... to Xu Hui.

Chapter 1046 Which Dynast Are You?

When the middle-aged man from True Sacred Yin World heard Su Ming being referred to as 'His Highness', his expression changed, because this title was one that only a certain group of people could obtain. Those with the title would be chosen to receive the education required to succeed the title of a Kalpa Lord in each true world.

That was why they were addressed as His or Her Highnesses, and were also known as Dynasts!

One of such people was Chang He. In True Sacred Yin World, he was known as a Dynast. Even though there were others who shared the same address, but one of them would definitely be chosen.

It was the same for True Morning Dao World. The ten Great Dynasts were ten people who had the potential to become the future Kalpa Lord of True Morning Dao World. One of them would certainly be chosen for that role. The period of time while waiting to be chosen was known as the period of time for the heirs to be tested. The ten of them would be provided with a large amount of resources, so their power would increase by leaps and bounds.

In the end, once they were chosen, they would go through an inheritance ceremony, and they would not only inherit the previous Kalpa Lord's cultivation base and epiphanies... they would also inherit the entire True Morning Dao World.

All those who were known as Dynasts in any true world were renowned people. Most of them were known to others, so even though the middle-aged man had been in isolation for many years, he had a specially-assigned person to send a jade slip to him once every hundred years to tell him what had happened in the four Great True Worlds. Because of that, he would not be completely ignorant of the matters in the world outside even though he lived all year long in isolation.

However, the middle-aged man was completely out of the loop in regards to Dao Kong as one of the ten Great Dynasts in True Morning Dao World. There was only one possibility for this—it was something that happened during the recent years, and it was in the jade slip he had yet to see.

But based on how the others also seemed to be completely unaware of it, the matter might not have happened during the past few decades. It should... have been something that was only made public during the recent years, which was why the people in the world outside could not know about it.

What also caused his heart to let out a loud thump against his chest was that the Almightyies from True Morning Dao World around the area... were not interfering in the slightest towards Dao Kong's actions. They watched unfeelingly as all the cultivators

from True Sacred Yin World stationed in the area died, seeming to harbor a great deal of respect towards Dao Kong.

The abnormality in this caused the middle-aged man expression to change.

'Even the Dynasts have different levels among themselves... which... Dynast is this person in True Morning Dao World?'

The middle-aged man's expression changed, but he had already taken a swift step forward to charge towards Su Ming. At the instant he attempted to use his power to overturn the universe, Su Ming also took a step forward. The galaxy rumbled, the flames from the fifth kiln spread out in billowing waves, and Su Ming's deep voice echoed in all directions.

"The next is all of you."

The crimson-haired Su Ming had madness and the desire for destruction on his face. The appearance of the fifth kiln caused the shrunken outline of the kiln to be a constant presence around his body. It was the barrier that the Almighty in Life Realm could not destroy even after he struck it at full strength.

Once Su Ming was in possession of absolute defense, he was invincible. The purple sea of fire that surged into the heavens and which could burn Almighties in Mastery Realm became only the first disaster he stirred up.

As Su Ming took a step forward, he immediately collided with the Almighty in Life Realm in the galaxy. With a loud bang, the middle-aged man's body was sent staggering backwards. He was continuously forced back several hundreds of feet, and his expression was incredibly dark.

"Attack at full strength. Even if he possesses the fifth kiln, if we attack at full strength, we can still shake his foundation!" As the middle-aged man growled, he lifted his right hand and seized space. Immediately, a thick layer of green appeared on his palm. The green light brightened to a piercing degree, until it formed a long green blade.

A vast presence that shook the sky and earth erupted from the middle-aged man with a bang.

At the same time, the other Almighties around him gritted their teeth. While in the tumbling sea of fire, they stopped retreating. Those in Fate Realm were in a better condition; they could control their bodies and move about in the sea of fire. Even if it tumbled about around them, they could all avoid it. However, the mighty pressure from the fifth kiln caused their aura to become chaotic.

As for the Almighties in Mastery Realm, they suffered the most in the sea of fire. They had managed to stop with much difficulty, but they did not dare to remain still for too

long. Resolve burst forth in their eyes. Booming sounds rose into the air, and all sorts of lights in a variety of colors flashed, and those Almightyies brought out their strongest Enchanted Treasures.

Soon, a great power erupted from everyone's bodies. There were ten people in total, and all of them rushed to Su Ming. The instant the ten long arcs closed in on him as if they were breaking through the sea of fire, a bloodthirsty smile appeared on Su Ming's lips.

"You want to attack me when I have the kiln with me?"

Su Ming lifted his right hand and formed a seal. He pointed at the outline of the kiln around him. Booming sounds immediately rang out. As they reverberated in space, the supreme treasures in the hands of six out of ten people who rushed towards Su Ming from all directions instantly shuddered. As their expressions changed, the supreme treasures fell out of their hands, and once their connections were broken off, they immediately floated over to Su Ming. They surrounded him and let out buzzing sounds as if they were worshipping him. As they spun around the area, light flashed around Su Ming's body, giving him a supreme mighty pressure at that instant.

The expressions of the six people who had lost their supreme treasures changed, and three of them tumbled backwards before immediately choosing to retreat. Determination surfaced on the faces of the other three, and without any hesitation, they rushed towards Su Ming.

He laughed coldly. He brought his right hand up, and the Life Inequity Spear instantly appeared. Once he seized it, he did not spare even a glance at the incoming Almightyies, the powerful warriors who would be respected, worshiped, and regarded with fervent zeal by a large number of cultivators in the world outside. He lifted his leg up and simply allowed all of them to charge towards him and bombard him with their attacks while he took a step towards the three retreating figures.

Su Ming's foot landed, and a crimson moon appeared behind him. It was so large that it instantly shocked all the people whose attacks had landed on the kiln barrier around him.

A loud bang shot up. The barrier around Su Ming shuddered violently. Withstanding the most powerful strike from the seven powerful warriors had caused it to shrink swiftly. Then... a powerful rebound was stirred up. When it swelled outwards, it caused the divine abilities from the seven people to tumble backwards, and with loud bangs, they collided against their owners.

The amount of power those people had used to attack him were reflected exactly back to them. As booming sounds reverberated in space, the seven people coughed up fresh blood, and all of them staggered backwards. Even the Almighty in Life Realm suffered the same fate. He might have fathomless power, but that one strike he delivered just

then had been the strongest attack he could muster with his power. Because of that, the rebound was difficult for him to handle.

At the instant the seven tumbled backwards, Su Ming's foot landed. In the blink of an eye, he appeared beside one of the three people who had chosen to retreat.

The Life Inequity Spear turned into a freezing glare that stabbed towards the center of the person's brows. The Almighty's expression changed. He opened his mouth and spat. Immediately, a large layer of fog gushed out. It turned into a shield in front of him and collided with the incoming blade tip. With a bang, the shield shattered, and the long spear in Su Ming's hand swayed backwards.

This minor delay allowed the Almighty to escape death, but the instant they moved, Su Ming seized the space in his direction. Immediately, a large number of branches formed on Su Ming's hand. With an incredibly quick speed, they sliced through space and closed in on that person, swiftly crawling into his body. The moment shrill, pained screams rose into the air, the person's body withered away. When he was reduced to a dried-up corpse, his screams fell silent.

Su Ming swung the numerous branches in his hand, but Ecang's presence did not spread out. Su Ming, who had now become the complete Ecang, could by then change his presence at will. At that moment, there was only malice spreading out from him. There was not a hint of Ecang's presence within it.

It had been the first Almighty Su Ming had killed in True Sacred Yin World's galaxy. That scene brought about great shock to the other Almighties in the area, and it was especially so for the two other people who had fled beforehand. One of them was the middle-aged woman who had brought about the disaster. Her face was pale, and as she retreated, she shuddered, because she saw Su Ming looking towards her.

At that moment, even if she was an Almighty, her associate's death along with the deaths of tens of thousands of cultivators sent from True Sacred Yin World to act as garrison, the endless sea of fire around her, and the bloodthirsty glare in Su Ming's eyes when he looked towards her turned into a nightmare which caused her to shriek. As she hastily retreated, a sharp pain throbbed on the spot on her left cheek where Su Ming had struck her previously.

The eyes of the other cultivator who had fled flashed with a knowing light when he saw that. He immediately changed his direction. He could tell that Su Ming's current target was the middle-aged woman, and at that moment, he no longer had any form of care for his companion in his mind. Leaving the place as soon as possible was the only thing that mattered to him.

When he did that, six of the seven people behind Su Ming did the exact same thing. Even if the Almighty in Life Realm was as awe-inspiring as ever, he could not stop the traitorous thought from rising in the people's hearts. No one knew who was the first to

retreat. In an instant, besides the Almighty in Life Realm, all the other six chose to run. They turned into long arcs that fled in six directions.

To them, their battle was simply impossible!

The instant they chose to retreat, Su Ming lifted his right hand and pointed at the first person who ran in the opposite direction, and who so happened to be the closest to him. Immediately, the fifth kiln in the galaxy swayed, and with an indescribable speed, it charged towards the cultivator. The man could not even dodge. With a bang, the huge fifth kiln crashed into him, tearing his body to pieces. He was reduced to a bloody mess, and his spirit was destroyed.

This was the second Almighty who died. At the instant it happened, Su Ming lifted his foot. When he placed it down, he appeared beside the middle-aged woman.

"You're next."

Chapter 1047 Huo Zhu

A disaster that True Sacred Yin World had never met before had come with the spread of the purple sea of fire. When Su Ming appeared beside the middle-aged woman, her face turned pale. She knew that it was already too late for her to retreat. She gritted her teeth. Murderous aura appeared in her eyes, and she swiftly bit through her tongue.

At the instant she did that, the broken part turned into a thick layer of fog that swept towards Su Ming.

With a bang, it disintegrated against the outline of the kiln around Su Ming. At the same time, the middle-aged woman's body swiftly withered. In the blink of an eye, it turned into a layer of blood essence that was reduced to tens of thousands of droplets before surging backwards.

"She bit her tongue to scatter her soul!" came a surprised cry from a person from True Morning Dao World hidden somewhere in space.

Su Ming let out a cold harrumph. Among the group of ten, the person he wanted to kill the most was the middle-aged woman. There was no way he would let her escape. At that moment, the droplets of blood were tumbling backwards in all directions at an extreme speed. Su Ming lifted his right hand and pointed at the fifth kiln. Immediately, it spun swiftly, and as it did so, a great, suction force was created. With it, the galaxy immediately trembled, as if the rotations from the fifth kiln had turned it into a gigantic black hole.

The tens of thousands of blood essence drops shuddered before being sucked back. They instantly disappeared into the fifth kiln and were completely absorbed.

As for the middle-aged woman, with just one thought, Su Ming could determine whether she would live or die within the fifth kiln. However, he would not kill her for the time being. Once her soul was sucked in, Su Ming formed a seal with his right hand and pointed at the fifth kiln. Immediately, shrill screams and wails came from inside. It lasted for a few breaths, then a dim light flew out, charging towards Su Ming. When it landed on his palm, a small human could be seen within it. That small human had her eyes shut tight, and her appearance... was that was of the middle-aged woman.

However, by then, she had already lost her intelligence. The only thing left... was a soul with memories contained in it.

Su Ming clenched his right hand and immediately crushed that soul. Pieces of memories entered his mind, for he was not interested in anything else. The only thing he wanted was all the things regarding Huo Zhu.

After a moment, he turned around and looked towards the six other people who had turned into long arcs to charge into the distance. His gaze then shifted to the sullen Almighty in Life Realm.

With his offensive powers, Su Ming had demonstrated his will to destroy. Tens of thousands of cultivators had been burned to death, countless planets had collapsed, Radix Planets had melted... and three Almighties had died. All of that turned Su Ming into an incredibly terrifying existence in the other people's eyes.

"Enough!" A low growl tumbled out of the Almighty in Life Realm. He glared at Su Ming with a dark expression.

"This galaxy has already been reduced to this state. Do you really want to kill all of us? If you truly insist on killing us, then even if you are one of the heirs to Morning Dao Sect, you will find it hard to escape being targeted by our Kalpa Lord." The voice of the Almighty in Life Realm boomed and echoed in the area like thunder. The intent to destroy flashed in his eyes, but a bloodthirsty smirk appeared on the lips of the crimson-haired Su Ming.

"Enough? It's indeed enough, but that word should be spoken by me." Su Ming licked his lips, and the third eye opened at the center of his brows. It shrank, and the world before him was instantly magnified several times its original size. The galaxy instantly became boundless in his eyes. His gaze landed on one of the old men out of the six fleeing from the area.

He was not the cultivator who was the first to deduce Zhu You Cai's level of cultivation. Instead... he was the first Almighty in Mastery Realm Su Ming had ever met in his life,

the person who had chased him with the power of one palm, forcing him to flee into Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands!

At the instant Su Ming looked towards him, the rapidly fleeing old man felt a chill creep up his spine. He turned around and saw Su Ming in the distance watching him.

A dark light shone in Su Ming's third eye at that instant. He lifted his right hand and pointed towards the fifth kiln. It let out a loud bang, and with an incredibly quick speed, charged towards the old man.

His face turned pale. As despair appeared in his eyes, the fifth kiln closed in on him. At the instant it was about to touch him, he roared, lifted his right hand, and pushed towards it.

That one push caused the space in front of the old man to tumble about. As it did, a gigantic, illusory palm appeared, swelling up instantly to the size of the fifth kiln and knocking into it.

Boom!

When the two collided, the kiln did not even shudder, and its speed also did not reduce. However, that palm shook violently before it was torn to pieces. The old man's bloodied right hand shattered.

He laughed brokenly, and the fifth kiln crashed into his body with a bang. Immediately, a layer of blood appeared in the galaxy. When it disappeared, the old man's Nascent Divinity also disappeared, sucked into the fifth kiln.

"Now, it's enough," Su Ming declared flatly. When he did so, the color of his hair gradually turned from crimson to gray. When he turned around, he looked towards the True Sacred Yin Realm's Almighty in Life Realm with calm gray pupils.

That old man stared at Su Ming with a dark look. After some time, he turned around without a single word and took a step towards space, but just as he was about to leave and the remaining five people in the distance were about to disappear, the fifth kiln let out a hum, and a layer of ripples spread out to cover the area like a seal. It froze up the whole galaxy, causing the people to come to an abrupt halt.

"What is the meaning of this now?" The Almighty in Life Realm rarely felt so outraged in his life. At that moment, he turned around swiftly, and suppressed rage appeared in his eyes.

"Before I, Dao, retrieve the item I need and locate that person called Huo Zhu, just wait here," Su Ming said calmly, and his gaze fell on the area in front of him.

The sea of fire surrounded the place. The collapse of the planets and the melting of the Radix Planets caused the galaxy to be an empty space. Only... the vortex formed by countless planets continued rotating slowly.

All the living creatures in the vortex had fled during the disaster just then.

Perhaps she had also fled during the chaos, but she would have definitely ended up dead then. If she did not die, there were only two possibilities. One of them was that she was still in the vortex of planets, and the other... was that she was hiding among the Almighty's who were about to escape.

It did not matter which it was, since Su Ming would still be able to seize the initiative in his hand. He stared at the vortex in the galaxy, then lifted his right hand to point forward. Immediately, the purple sea of fire around him tumbled about. As it swept outwards in all directions, it went surging towards the vortex of planets with a loud bang. He did not care whether Huo Zhu was still in there nor what her wishes were; he simply decided to use a crude method to forcefully melt those planets and blast her out if she was there.

With a loud bang, the Rune in the vortex of planets crumbled. The planets were then immediately burned to ashes.

As they were destroyed, a planet was revealed several breaths later. When Su Ming looked towards it, a cold sneer appeared on his lips.

He took a step forward, and his body instantly disappeared. When he reappeared, he had already closed in on the planet. He took another step, and stood on the land in the planet. The place was a desert, but it was burning with purple flames at that moment.

In the distance was a hall. There were great waves of resentment spreading out from inside it. Su Ming stared at that place, then saw a distorted shadow beyond the hall. It had the shape of a woman's face, and she was glaring at him.

"I have never offended you, senior! Why did you do this?"

A shrill voice came from the shadow of the woman's face beyond the hall, no longer possessing any composure. Clearly, the things that happened in the world outside had already stunned Divine General Huo Zhu, so much so that she was shivering to the point that her soul had almost shattered from fear.

She could not think of when she had brought about such a disaster upon herself. In fact, she was certain that she had never met the young man in front of her, and it had been a long time since she left her planet.

With a calm look, Su Ming took a step forward. Each time his feet landed on the desert sand, the planet would tremble. As he approached the hall, the illusory face beyond it continued to look at him with resentment.

Su Ming walked forward. Just as the woman was about to interrogate him again, he said flatly, "Bring Kong Mo's physical body here."

His sentence caused the expression of the woman, who had been about to speak, to instantly change. Disbelief appeared in her eyes. When she looked towards Su Ming, dark light shone in her eyes, and when she opened her mouth, a piercing howl rang out.

As she howled, the illusory face broke down with a bang to turn into the faces of tens of thousands of men and women, the elderly and the young. They charged towards Su Ming as if they wanted to devour him.

"You overestimate yourself."

Su Ming had already closed in on her. Not a single hint of emotion was contained in his gray pupils. He lifted his right hand and punched forward. At the instant he did so, the world roared. Before the tens of thousands of faces could get close, all of them tumbled backwards and collapsed with a bang. In fact, even the hall fell into pieces. When it exploded, it revealed a table and the burning candle on it.

As the candle's flame distorted, a woman's face showed up, and she spoke urgently towards Su Ming. "Who is Kong Mo? I don't have his physical body! This is a misunderstanding! Senior, do not believe in other people's slander!"

"We will know whether or not this is a misunderstanding once I extract your soul and search through your memories." Su Ming stepped into the collapsed hall and moved towards the candle flame.

Chapter 1048 Kong Mo's Physical Body

The one thousand something years was a long time. But if anyone would go back it, then when everyone was on this spot in the past, in the same camp belonging to the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World, in the same vortex of planets, in the same planet with the desert, and in the same hall...

... the cultivator from True Sacred Yin World who once chased down Su Ming would be kneeling on the ground, telling Huo Zhu the story of a person called Mo Su in Western Ring Nebula. He would even tell her that there was a crane by his side.

In the past, Huo Zhu stood in a superior position. Her voice was filled with an awe-inspiring might and could make the person kneeling tremble in respect. With just one sentence, she could decide whether Su Ming would live or die in Western Ring Nebula.

In truth, if anyone was to get to the bottom of things, then in the past, Su Ming had been forced into Western Ring Nebula's foreign lands... because of that conversation.

One thousand something years had passed since then. Su Ming returned and stood in front of Huo Zhu once more. Echoing by his ears was her quivering voice addressing him as senior. It was a pity that Su Ming did not know of what had happened in the past, or else he would definitely feel a great amount of emotions.

It was a pity that Huo Zhu, too, did not know that the Mo Su whose fate she had decided in the past with just one sentence was standing before her right then, having destroyed her world and the galaxy in which it was situated.

Destiny was that confusing, that troublesome, and would cause the people involved in it to shift places without their knowledge... It was also why it could make people so persistent and addicted to it. It made them struggle and fight against it in an attempt to escape the set ups... but that struggle and resistance was akin to moths trying to avoid flames. In the end, those who could be reborn in the fire would not be those who ran away, but those who were willing to fall in fire—the undying phoenixes.

Su Ming approached the woman. When he lifted his right hand, there was an aloof look on his face. At the instant he seized the air in the direction of the candle flame, a piercing screech came from it.

It was not unpleasant to the ears, sounding like a ballad. Even though Su Ming could not hear the lyrics clearly, all those who heard melody would still know that it was a ballad.

At the same time, the ancient book on the table started unfurling swiftly. As its pages turned, it was as if the flow of time around Su Ming was swiftly flowing away at a pace of thousands of years in an instant.

This was Huo Zhu's divine ability, the one which allowed her to stay in that place!

Time Is Akin to a Song!

Su Ming's lifted right hand started withering away rapidly right before his eyes as if one thousand years had passed while he stretched it out. Huo Zhu had executed that divine ability many times in her life. Every single time she used it, an astonishing effect would be seen, but this time...

"A child's play!"

The instant Su Ming's right hand began to wither, he let out a cold harrumph. One of the Abyss Builders' inborn ability was the Art of Time. Perhaps Huo Zhu's divine ability would be effective when it was used to fight against other outsiders, but when it was used on Su Ming, there would be no effect.

When he let out the cold harrumph, his right hand immediately returned to normal. The power of time around him instantly disappeared in an unseen manner. The ancient book shuddered, and half of its pages were immediately reduced to powder.

At the same time, the candle fire was also mostly extinguished. It struggled with great difficulty. When she saw that Su Ming's right hand was about to touch it, the woman's face in it became distorted, and she screeched again.

The ancient book on the table was originally flipping rapidly from left to right, even though half of its pages had been destroyed. However, the instant Huo Zhu let out her screech, the pages immediately started flipping from right to left, in the opposite direction.

At the same time, a power reversing the flow of time swiftly spread out from Su Ming's body.

"My strongest attack isn't the passing of time, but the reversal of time. With my life as the price, I will reverse time!"

Huo Zhu's voice was piercing to the ears. At the instant it rang out, Su Ming's body immediately seemed to go back in time. His cultivation base and his Nascent Divinity also flowed away from him. The presence of that power caused the cold sneer on Su Ming's lips to become wider, and he decided to just let go of his control over himself to let that power of time reversal to spread out around him

"Three thousand years!" Huo Zhu roared.

Immediately, Su Ming's body started shrinking rapidly. In an instant, it seemed as if he had been reduced to nothing, as if he no longer existed. An unsophisticated presence appeared came from him. The reversal of time had brought back the presence he possessed when he was in Dark Mountain back, but soon, all of it disappeared without a trace. Another presence appeared... although one that he also had when he was in Dark Mountain.

"How could this be?!" Huo Zhu eyes went wide, and disbelief appeared in them before she roared again. "Three thousand years!"

The reversal of time continued, but the smile on Su Ming's lips did not change. When his body turned semi-transparent, he looked as if he was going through cycles of reincarnation, and the presences he possessed the multiple times he was in Dark Mountain surrounded him.

All of this caused Huo Zhu's expression to change continuously. Disbelief appeared in her eyes, and she roared again while offering up her life.

"Thirty thousand years!" At that time, she gave up everything. As she roared, the power of time caused thirty thousand years to reverse for Su Ming. Huo Zhu let out a sigh of relief, but then suddenly screamed shrilly in pain.

Su Ming's body remained semi-transparent, but the inside of his body was as empty as a black hole. This was time returning to the point when he had not been born... when the power of the curse had surrounded him in his mother's womb.

The instant Huo Zhu touched the curse via her divine ability, it immediately spread out and invaded her soul. Her scream reverberated only for an instant before the ancient book shattered, and the candle flame... was extinguished.

Su Ming's expression remained as calm as ever. He had been able to tell that this would happen from the start, or else he would not have put up no resistance. In truth, he had wanted to use that chance to verify just how strong was the curse.

The moment Huo Zhu's life was extinguished, the candlestick crumbled with a bang to reveal... a corpse hidden in the dimension within it!

It was a woman's corpse. It was old and rotting away swiftly, its stench filling the area in no time. Su Ming lifted his right hand and seized the air in the direction of the storage bag on the carcass. Immediately, it landed on his hand. When he struck it, it instantly crumbled, and a black coffin fell to the ground.

A powerful mighty pressure spread out. The strength of it caused Su Ming's heart to tremble at the instant he sensed it. His pupils shrank. This presence... surpassed all that Su Ming had ever sensed in his life.

In fact... the only presence that could compare to this was the one whom Su Ming had seen in the pictures provided by the fifth kiln—Chang He's Master, the Sublime Paragon from True Sacred Yin World!

At the instant the coffin appeared, the bald crane flew out of Su Ming's storage bag. Shivering, it stared at the coffin... and the carcass within it.

Based on it, one could see that it was a ferocious beast. However, by then it was a bloody mess. The blood might have dried long ago, but it was impossible for anyone to tell how the creature had looked like in the past. Yet the presence spreading out from the carcass was astonishingly similar to that of the bald crane.

It shuddered while staring at the carcass in the coffin with a stupefied expression. It mumbled to itself, or maybe it was to Su Ming. "What a strange feeling... Darn it all, this was my physical body in the past?"

"I have a strong feeling that once I fuse with it, most of my memories will return. I'll remember plenty of things I've forgotten... my origins, my identity, and how I became an entity that has a soul as a body.

"I'll also be able to remember... Darn it all, I'll know just who it was that nearly caused my soul to scatter..." The bald crane shuddered. It raised its right claw, but just as it was about to touch the carcass, it suddenly shuddered.

"I also have a strong feeling that once I remember all that... I-I will no longer be me. I will no longer be the bald crane, and I will no longer be Su Ming's companion... Who... Who will I be then?" The bald crane trembled even more fiercely, and conflict appeared on its face.

"I will turn into another person, or rather, I will become my past self, and then I will no longer exist... but I will become stronger... much stronger!" The bald crane's mind was a little muddled. It threw its head swiftly and roared with struggle and conflict on its face.

Su Ming saw this, but chose to remain silent. He had helped the bald crane retrieve its physical body not because it was a pet to him... but a friend.

Even though this friend was a little unreliable and very avaricious... a friend was a friend.

However, Su Ming could not help it choose. It would have to choose how it wanted to walk down its path.

"Darn it all, why do I feel like I despise my past self very much... Once I fuse with it, I will become it, but... but I want to fuse with it very much. I want to remember everything. I want to know... what I lost in my life... why I would cry when I stare at Husband Gazing Mountain, why I would feel horrible when I stare at the galaxy, and why I would remember a certain group of people during certain times..." As the bald crane struggled with itself, its eyes turned bloodshot and it turned around to stare at Su Ming.

"Darn it all, I'm living a merry life right now. I won't fuse with it, but I'll help you keep it. When you'll collect all of my physical body in the future, then I'll fuse with it; it won't be too late by then, anyway," the bald crane said through gritted teeth while putting on an unconcerned expression for Su Ming.

He cast the bald crane a glance, respecting its decision. When he lifted his right hand, he swung his arm, and the coffin exuding the presence that caused him to shudder was instantly put away into his storage bag. Soon after, the mighty pressure in the land vanished.

The bald crane slumped down. There was still a hint of a reluctance to part in its eyes, but it soon turned into determination. As Su Ming turned around, the bald crane transformed into a long arc with Su Ming and left the planet.

Everything ended. When Su Ming left the vortex, he released the seal from the fifth kiln placed on the galaxy that was previously the camp for the forces of power from True Sacred Yin World. The Almighty from Life Realm cast Su Ming a deep glance before turning around and disappearing. He left the galaxy. The other five people in the distance also disappeared to flee... from all the wreckage.

Chapter 1049 Goodbye, Barren Lands of Divine Essence!

Su Ming stood in the galaxy and stared at the group heading into the distance with an aloof expression. As the space behind him distorted, around a dozen people walked out.

Among them was Xu Hui, the nine old Frail Darknesses, as well as six old men with complicated expressions. One of them was an old man with a purplish black face. The mighty pressure spreading out from his body was the thickest, and it was on par with the Almighty in Life Realm from True Sacred Yin Realm. It was clear that he was someone with the same status in the camp that belonged to the forces of power from True Morning Dao World as the middle-aged man from True Sacred Yin World.

"Greetings, Your Highness! We welcome you back!"

The nine old Frail Darknesses had excited looks on their faces. They bowed together towards Su Ming. They had followed him into Divine Essence Star Ocean in the past, and though they remained at the periphery, they had still experienced quite a number of things. They were incredibly worried about Su Ming, and even though they had returned to the camp where the forces of power from True Morning Dao World were stationed, they were still worried about his safety. At that moment, when Su Ming saw their excitement, he could not help but wrap his fist in his palm and bow to them as well.

When Su Ming turned around, the color of his hair had already changed to its normal shade. He also saw Xu Hui. At that moment, there was a smile on Xu Hui's lips. It was so gentle that it looked as if it could melt anything.

"I am Tai An Yin. Greetings, Dynast Dao Kong." The old man with the purplish black face wrapped his fist in his palm towards Su Ming and bowed deeply. In truth, with his level of cultivation, even if he met True Morning Dao World's heir, he did not need to do this. Unless that heir truly became the master of Morning Dao World, he was not worthy of the old man bowing to him.

However, the things that happened just then had shocked him deeply. At that moment, he was not bowing in respect to Su Ming as the heir, but was using the form of greeting for those of equal status. No one in the area felt that there was anything amiss about him choosing that. The five people behind him also wrapped their fists in their palms and bowed simultaneously.

"Greetings, Dynast Dao Kong."

Su Ming stared at the people in front of him, and a faint smile gradually appeared on his lips. At that moment, Flame Fiends' Progenitor cast a sideways glance at the people around them while beside Su Ming. Zhu You Cai, who had walked out of being sealed a long time ago.

"I remember that when I entered Divine Essence Star Ocean, no one referred to me as a Dynast." Su Ming looked towards Xu Hui.

"Your Highness, you might not know about this, but three months ago, a sealed order came from within Morning Dao Sect to designate you as one of the heirs." Xu Hui was not the one who answered. Instead, it was one of the nine old Frail Darknesses beside her.

"Three months ago..." A barely noticeable glint shone in Su Ming's eyes. Three months ago... that was the time when he had walked out of the fifth kiln.

Su Ming remained silent for a moment before he suddenly asked, "Did you say that there were ten heirs?"

"That is correct. There are ten designated Dynasts. All of them possess the right to become the heir. The future master of True Morning Dao World will be chosen among the ten. However..." An Almighty in Mastery Realm beside Tai An Yin said respectfully. When he reached the contradictory part, he hesitated for a moment. When he saw Su Ming look towards him, he continued.

"However, based on Morning Dao Sect's rules, you will need to return as soon as possible to receive the challenges and trials from the members of your sect, Your Highness. Only when you receive the Progenitor's blessing will you truly be able to receive the world."

Su Ming's expression remained the same, the smile still on his lips.

"It has been a long time since Morning Dao Sect chose heirs, but based on the records in ancient scrolls, every single time it happens, the heirs would be tested by the members of their sects. If there they manage to complete the challenges successfully, they will obtain the right.

"Then, they would receive the trials of the heirs. The sect would distribute a mission for each one, and those who complete it are examined. If they succeed, they receive Progenitor Dao Chen's blessing, and will then be conferred the official title.

"Your Highness, to you, everything will not pose too much of a problem. But you will still have to be careful. There are nine other heirs," Tai An Yin said calmly as he stared at Su Ming.

"I only know that the other nine are all older than you. Three of them are even from the same generation as I am." Tai An Yin did not say much, but those few sentences already told Su Ming plenty of crucial points.

"So there will be plenty who will challenge, and there will also be plenty of people who won't want me to complete my trial. Even if I eventually succeed, I will have to protect myself against the other nine." Su Ming smiled faintly.

"I hope that there will come a day when you will become the master of True Morning Dao World, Your Highness... but your actions here might become a weapon used by the other factions of the other heirs from the sect to attack you.

"Also, the source of your sudden increase in cultivation as well as the fact that you are in possession of the fifth kiln will become the source of other people's suspicions. After all, there are plenty of Possessions in the world, so please be careful." Tai An Yin smiled. As he spoke, the other Almightyies by his side lowered their heads and closed their eyes, as if they did not hear his words.

The nine old Frail Darknesses also lowered their heads and closed their eyes, as if they did not hear those words.

When Su Ming heard them, his expression remained the same; the smile was still on his face.

"I received enlightenment from the Progenitor in the past, and it was only because of him that I gained my current power to protect all my fellow Daoists in this land, who were the people the Progenitor occasionally sent here while being in isolation. Each of them... are eternally grateful to the Progenitor." Tai An Yin smiled and wrapped his fist in his palm to Su Ming.

"We of the nine old Frail Darknesses originally failed in the cultivation method we practiced. The bodies of eight of us crumbled, and we were bound to die when with nine souls sharing one body. It was the Progenitor who sent us a Spirit Core in the past that allowed us to separate and form our bodies again. We... will never forget this grace." The nine old Frail Darknesses bowed again to Su Ming.

"The war in True Morning Dao World is still ongoing. Right now, half of True Morning Dao World belongs to the Immortals' Union. Once you return, you must be careful of them... There isn't much time. There is a space separating everything in Divine Essence Star Ocean from the worlds beyond. They will need some time before they'll know of what happened here. Your Highness, to prevent all of us from suffering long nights fraught with dreams, I will not send you off."

Tai An Yin swung his arm. Immediately, distortions appeared behind him. Booming sounds came from within, and hundreds of gigantic battleships flew out. When they

arranged themselves in a horizontal line, the near ten thousand cultivators in black armor stood up and knelt down on one knee to Su Ming. Their voices roared like waves.

"Greetings, Your Highness!"

The echoes of their words boomed and lingered for a long time in space. Su Ming cast Tai An Yin a glance before wrapping his fist in his palm towards him. Then, he appeared on the largest battleship. He was incredibly familiar with it, for it was the one he rode on when he headed to Divine Essence Star Ocean and ran into the Waves of Tears.

Flame Fiends' Progenitor and Zhu You Cai followed Su Ming and went to stand behind him on the battleship. The nine old Frail Darknesses turned into long arcs and landed on the deck around him as well. As for Xu Hui, she naturally stayed with Su Ming with a smile on her face.

Under Tai An Yin and the others' gazes, the hundreds of battleships turned into hundreds of long arcs and rushed out from the galaxy. They charged forward, and about a quarter of an hour later, a gigantic vortex appeared in front of them.

Divine Essence Star Ocean was in the shape of a gourd, and the vortex was located at its mouth. Once they passed through it, they could leave Divine Essence Star Ocean, then through the Runes belonging to the different forces of power from the different True Worlds head to different True Worlds.

As Su Ming stared at the vortex, he could not help the excitement that rose in his heart. When they drew closer to the vortex, he turned his head around and looked towards the galaxy behind him. He stared at the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, and the events that had happened over the past almost two thousand years rose in his head. When he was still a cultivator in Earth Cultivation Realm, he had been forced in there, and he lay on the ground in Crimson Flame Planet, completely immobile.

At that time, he had that mask on his face and could feel no emotions. He was so weak that anyone could control him. Back then, he did not dare to think about how he could leave the Barren Lands of Divine Essence which was like a prison.

Yet after all that he had gone through, he had risen to power in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. He became the master of Echang, awakened the Seed of Life Extermination, destroyed the fifth ocean, became the master of the fifth kiln, and also became a legend among the alien races in Divine Essence Star Ocean. At the same time... he also destroyed the galaxy where True Sacred Yin World was stationed.

The events passed like fleeting clouds and smoke through Su Ming's eyes. When he turned his head around, he stared at the vortex that had drawn closer and could not suppress the excitement in his heart. He... Su Ming, was about to return to True Morning Dao World!

He was about to have True Morning Dao World at his beck and call, and he would let all his acquaintances in the past know... that he, Su Ming, had returned!

Bright Yang Region would no longer be dangerous to Su Ming, because he no longer possessed a body from Yin Death Region. In the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, he had gone through a metamorphosis.

He would step into True Morning Dao World and into Bright Yang Region like a normal person!

Di Tian, the will in Yin Death Region, and all the people he was familiar with in the past, unless some of them had already passed away, Su Ming knew that when he returned after being separated from the place for nearly two thousand years, he would meet all of them again.

His childhood playmates, the prodigies from the sects, and his elder as well as Lei Chen, whom he had yet to meet... Su Ming believed that he would be able to find traces of all of them in True Morning Dao Sect!

His eldest senior brother who possessed the blood of Nine Li, was headless, and who swung his battle axe to fight against the heavens.

His second senior brother who was the Phantom King, but looked like a flower, was gentle, and liked the sun to shine on his side profile.

His third senior brother who was formed by the Vessel Spirit of the Rune sealing Yin Death Region, who snored while he slept, who looked as if anger was contained in his eyes when he opened them, who had an honest and straightforward demeanor when he laughed, who loved wiping the corners of his mouth when he drank, who taught himself everything about Runes, and who practiced the Dao of Entering Dreams.

Once all of these people flashed past Su Ming's eyes, he remembered Fang Cang Lan, Tian Lan Meng, and the Sacred Lady, Wan Qiu, from the Shamans.

When Su Ming remembered Fang Cang Lan's gentleness, the image of a person always standing facing the sea breeze rose in his head.

Tian Lan Meng's quiet personality and the faintly discernible thread between them always seemed to be connecting them with a sigh of regret. There was also Wan Qiu. The pride the woman possessed in the past caused him to constantly think of a fish flying in the sky when he remembered her.

There was also... a woman who had left behind an incredibly deep impression in his mind, and who was a person Su Ming could not forget. Her name, her face, and all her smiles turned into one single sentence in Su Ming's memories.

"Do you know why I'm called Yu Xuan...? The meaning for Xuan is daylily. I'm a daylily in the rain. My mother wanted me to forget sadness in my life and be happy forever..."

Su Ming closed his eyes. The last person he remembered was a woman standing beside his physical body with an aloof expression that held no emotions, but whose words were the exact opposite, because they were born from a desire to confuse Su Ming's mind and cause him to harbor deep affection for her.

'I've come back...!' The hundreds of battleships shot through the vortex without a single sound.

Chapter 1050 True Morning Dao World

There was an unfamiliar air in the galaxy. It was empty, unlike how galaxies were usually. Within that emptiness was some dazzling starlight. A gigantic vortex appeared to the northwest of True Morning Dao World. As it vortex rotated, the sound echoed in all directions.

There were ninety-nine giant stone platforms floating around that vortex. Complicated runic symbols were carved on all of them. When they shone with a dark light, ninety-nine cultivators could be found sitting on them.

There was a rotten presence spreading out from all of them. Their expressions were of indifference, as if they had been sitting there for countless years. There was a huge black sword stuck into the stone platforms, and it was positioned right in front of each person. The weeping of the swords could be heard faintly.

They were crying, roaring, because they were in a state akin to being abandoned. It had been many years since they had drunk a living being's blood. They could only stay there and accompany their masters in silence, protecting the area for all eternity.

The ninety-nine stone platforms formed a circle. Anyone who looked over would feel as if the vortex had been formed by those stone platforms.

As it spun about, the ninety-nine cultivators continued sitting and meditating as if they were deep in slumber and completely unbothered by everything around them.

Time trickled by. When the time taken for an incense stick to burn had passed and booming sounds shook the galaxy, the vortex's rotations stopped, and battleships came out from within.

Once they appeared, wave after wave of mighty pressure spread through through the galaxy. The cultivators on the battleships had already stood up with serious expressions

on their faces. The mighty pressure instantly reached an incredibly high level, but even so, it still could not make the ninety-nine people on the stone platforms open their eyes.

After a moment, when the huge battleship that belonged to Su Ming located right at the center of the hundreds of battleships appeared from the vortex, the mighty pressure spreading out from it immediately caused a large amount of ripples to spread through the galaxy. Su Ming stood at the bow of the ship and stared ahead of him. The galaxy was unfamiliar to him, but at the same time, he knew it well; he had never seen it himself, but Dao Kong had possessed many memories regarding the place.

Su Ming knew that it was... True Morning Dao World!

It was the universe in which he had never stepped into, but was where his homeland was located.

When the hundreds of battleships appeared from the vortex, the mighty pressure that was formed instantly caused the ripples spreading out to become stronger. That was not only due to the collection of power from the near ten thousand cultivators from the hundreds of battleships, but also due to... Flame Fiends' Progenitor, Zhu You Cai, and Su Ming.

The mighty pressure spreading from them alone was enough to make the galaxy tremble.

Su Ming's eyes were calm, but there were emotions hidden within them that no one else could see. He knew that the moment he stepped inside, he would be reduced from the strongest in Divine Essence Star Ocean to an ordinary cultivator.

The fifth kiln had to remain in Divine Essence Star Ocean. Without it, if Su Ming came face to face with Almighties in Life Realm again, he could not push his will on them. It was precisely because of it that when he was about to leave the Barren Lands of Divine Essence, he did something as mad as destroying an entire galaxy.

He believed that before long, this matter would be known to all four Great True Worlds. As countless people would be stunned by his audacity, his name would instantly ring through all True Worlds.

And what Su Ming wanted was not to remain an unknown entity in True Morning Dao World that did things under a low profile... What he wanted was ostentatiousness, arrogance, and domineeringness!

Because of it, those who would dare to provoke him would be few in number. No one would ever even consider that Su Ming might not have brought the fifth kiln with him.

A barely noticeable glint shone in his eyes. The shadow of a kiln fleetly past the third eye at the center of his brows.

Su Ming had indeed left behind the fifth kiln in Divine Essence Star Ocean... but the connection he shared with it was not something he would lose just like that. If Su Ming had enough time on his hands during battle, he would be able to make the fifth kiln appear briefly like how he had summoned Ecang's real form in the past.

However, unless he absolutely had to, Su Ming did not want to do it.

'True Morning Dao World...'

Su Ming stared at the galaxy, and a smile slowly appeared on his lips. It grew wider, and in the end, it turned into loud laughter. It echoed in the galaxy, but all the cultivators around him looked as if they had not heard it. They continued to stand still on the battleships.

Su Ming had come back. Few people would be able to imagine that he would return in this manner—walking out of the Barren Lands of Divine Essence's exit in a straightforward manner and with his head held high.

The power of Bright Yang was even stronger and thicker in this galaxy compared to when he was in the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. It existed everywhere, but that presence did not manage to make Su Ming uncomfortable. The effect had already been reduced to its utmost limit. In fact, it could already be ignored.

Behind Su Ming, Flame Fiends' Progenitor had an excited look on his face. He might be an Almighty, but this was still the first time he had ever stepped into the four Great True Worlds, and he could even do it with his head held high. This filled him with intense excitement.

By his side, the bald crane's eyes roved around. When they did so, a smug, naughty grin appeared on its beak. Its eyes sparkled. It seemed to be able to see that there were countless crystals waiting for it, and this was the highest form of enjoyment in its life.

"This area is the fixed Relocation spot near the Barren Lands of Divine Essence. We'll still need about three months before we arrive in Morning Dao Sect," Xu Hui said softly while standing beside Su Ming.

His eyes shone. He stared at the ninety-nine stone platforms around him and sensed an ancient and archaic presence from the cultivators whose expressions had yet to change. He could sense a sharp, glaring presence hidden within them. If it spread out, it would shake the universe.

When Xu Hui saw Su Ming looking towards the ninety-nine people, she told him all she knew. "These ninety-nine seniors of ours are powerful warriors sent from Morning Dao Sect to defend the exit. Their levels of cultivation are a mystery, so the only thing we know is that they practice a cultivation method that is different from ours. It's a strange legacy Art. The sword is their Art, and their swords are like their lives.

"They might be under Morning Dao Sect's jurisdiction, but they only listen to Progenitor Dao Chen's orders. No one else can order them. Their current orders are to stop anyone from the other True Worlds from stepping into this place."

When Su Ming heard it, he stared at the ninety-nine cultivators for another moment before averting his gaze. The hundreds of battleships headed off into the distance. They turned into hundreds of long arcs that charged towards Morning Dao Sect.

They would bring Su Ming to receive his challenges and trials, and to be given the entire True World to become the real Dynast!

Su Ming stood at the bow of the ship. As he watched the galaxy, he sensed that the power of Bright Yang truly did not cause any form of discomfort to him. By then, seven days had passed.

During them, the galaxy had been empty. Not a single planet appeared within sight. At that moment, seven days later, Su Ming saw an array of planets before him.

"This region belongs to Morning Dao Sect. The cultivators in all the planets are tribes under its jurisdiction. The west and north still belong to Morning Dao Sect, but the west and east regions have been conquered by the Immortals' Union and have become a war zone," Xu Hui said softly while pointing towards the planets before them.

"There lies the Tadriss. They are people of Sect Elder Mo Da, who is one of the three thousand Great Sect Elders in Morning Dao Sect. The categorizations of social status are very strict and like a tower. There is only one person at the top of the tower, and he is Progenitor Dao Chen, who has been in isolation for many years.

"He is not just the master of Morning Dao Sect, but also the Kalpa Lord of True Morning Dao World. He protects the entire True Morning Dao World, and the only person above him is the True Progenitor, who is also known as the Sublime Paragon.

"However, there is a veil of mystery surrounding the Progenitor. No one knows where he is and who he is.

"Under the Progenitor is the Council of Sect Masters. It decides most of the things in Morning Dao Sect. There are a total of seventy-two people in the Council of Sect Masters, and each of them is an incredibly powerful existence.

"These people seldom venture out, and they are in isolation most of the time. Three of them will wake up once every century to decide the matters in Morning Dao Sect for a decade.

"Under the Council of Sect Masters are... the ten Great Dynasts, who are usually just empty existences, but who now have shown up. Including you, all ten Great Dynasts

have to be in control of a chamber. It is originally empty, so you will have to add things in it on your own.

"Under the ten Great Dynasts are 333 Gods, 666 Immortals, and 999 Saints. These people have incredibly noble statuses, and they can be said to be people in Morning Dao Sect who decide the destiny. They are usually deep in slumber and will not venture out easily. Once they appear, they will destroy everything.

"All of these are the powerful of Morning Dao Sect's Inner Sect. Unless it runs into a disaster that threatens to destroy it, they will not appear.

"The ones in Outer Sect are Morning Dao Sect's four chambers: Sect Elder Chamber, War Chamber, World Protection Chamber, and last... is the chamber which only the ten Great Dynasts can control. It has been a decoration for many years, and even the Council of Sect Masters cannot interfere with it—the Palace Chamber!"

As the battleships moved forward, Xu Hui explained the structure of Morning Dao Sect to Su Ming in a soft whisper. Some of the things she told him were part of Dao Kong's memories, so as they overlapped with the things Xu Huy said, Su Ming got a clearer picture of Morning Dao Sect.

Xu Hui continued speaking, telling him everything that she knew. The battleships continued forward, and after a moment, they approached the planets.

Long arcs flew up from those planets. They were packed densely together and numbered to tens of thousands. When the cultivators flew up, they bowed together towards the battleship where Su Ming stood.

There were around a dozen people who bowed towards Su Ming with respect on their faces while standing in front of all the cultivators.

"Greetings, Greater Sect Member!" As these people spoke, the tens of thousands of people behind immediately bowed and repeated the words. "Greetings, Greater Sect Member!"

Their words echoed in all directions. Even in the galaxy, their voices still sounded like thunder roaring. There was fervent zeal and respect on their faces, as if just one sentence from the Greater Sect Member they addressed would be enough for their whole race to rush out in obedience!

Chapter 1051 Hang It at the Bow of the Ship!

"Besides the Palace Chamber, the other three chambers from Morning Dao Sect are under the jurisdiction of the Sect Masters who awaken once every century. All the people have to listen to their orders and fulfill all their requests.

"The most famous among them is the Sect Elder Chamber. There are ninety-nine Chamber Elders, seven hundred Grand Sect Elders, three thousand Great Sect Elders, and thirty thousand ordinary Sect Elders.

"The ordinary Sect Elders can take in disciples as they please. Their disciples form the members of the perimeter surrounding the Sect Elder Chamber, and their numbers... are difficult to estimate." While Xu Hui spoke of Morning Dao Sect's structure, Su Ming stared at the tens of thousands of cultivators worshiping him near the planets in the distance and remembered his Master, Tian Xie Zi.

His senior brothers once mentioned that Tian Xie Zi was taken in as a disciple by a Sect Elder from Morning Dao Sect. Once it correlated with Xu Hui's words, Su Ming gained a better understanding of the Sect Elder Chamber located in the Outer Sect of Morning Dao Sect.

"The Sect Elder Chamber's mission is to control all races and forces of power in True Morning Dao World like a spider web. With the passage of time, they had turned the entire True Morning Dao World into a gigantic net.

"The chaos brought by the Immortals' Union was out of Morning Dao Sect's expectations, which is related to the Sect Elder Chamber.

"The War Chamber is a force of power that makes all races in Morning Dao Sect tremble. They are like a sharp blade, and whenever it strikes, blood will flow out in rivers...

"The War Cultivators number to one million, and they execute destruction. They are the greatest force in the rebellion waged by the Immortals' Union.

"The next is the World Protection Chamber. They won't join the internal strife within the True World so easily, and they are stationed at the edges of True Morning Dao World to prevent the invasion from other True Worlds. They are the strongest chamber with such a task.

"Only when Morning Dao Sect is close to destruction will they take action, because when they take action, then there is a high possibility that True Morning Dao Sect will be invaded by the other True Worlds.

"The ninety-nine people you saw just now were members from the World Protection Chamber. As long as they are not asked to leave their spots, they will defend the exit to the Barren Lands of Divine Essence.

"The last are the ten Great Palace Chambers. Since they have only existed in name for ages, not even I know what sort of mission they'll have once Morning Dao Sect activates them."

As Xu Hui spoke, Su Ming stared at the planets getting closer to them. He watched the cultivators worshipping him, and he could sense the strength and size of Morning Dao Sect.

The people before him clearly were their own race, and they were definitely not small in number. If there were tens of thousands of cultivators who possessed the power to fly out of their planets, then there would definitely be even more people who remained below. Even though they did not possess the power to fly out of their planets, they would definitely possess combat abilities.

Su Ming even saw quite a number of people who were Lords of World Planes among who had flown out. Some of the dozen-something at the forefront of the group were clearly in the later stage of World Plane Realm. In fact, there were three among them who were in Lunar Kalpa Realm, and one of them was in Solar Kalpa Realm.

These people far surpassed what power the Berserkers possessed in Su Ming's memories. Yet... when that powerful race saw the battleships from Morning Dao Sect, all of its people came forth to pay their respects together. With the greatest form of greeting, they demonstrated their respect towards Morning Dao Sect.

Su Ming was silent. He knew that Morning Dao Sect was very powerful. After all, it was the strongest existence in a True World, and they were the master of an entire galaxy. However, it was just a thought in his mind before. Even if he had Dao Kong's memories, he had not directly perceived Morning Dao Sect's strength, but... when he saw an entire race worshipping him, he could feel the majesty and grandeur of Morning Dao Sect.

After all, there were plenty of races in True Morning Dao Sect. In fact, there were quite a number which were even more powerful than the people in front of them. However, before the chaos brought by the Immortals' Union, all of them and all the sects had obeyed Morning Dao Sect and regarded Dao Chen as their master.

A great wave of sentiment rose in Su Ming's heart. Because of that, he did not notice that the bald crane behind him looked ahead with sparkling eyes. They had a crystalline glow, as though there were countless crystals shining in them. The bald crane was so excited that it was shivering. The emotion on its face had already reached its peak. It moved forward with the hundreds of battleships, but the instant they approached the cultivators from the race worshipping Su Ming, it rushed out.

"Crystals! Give me all your crystals! I want crystals! Give me ten thousand— No, fifty thousand— Darn it all, give me one hundred thousand crystals!" The bald crane had been holding it in for half a day. As it roared, it demanded a sum that it believed to be a large number of crystals.

When it spoke, all the cultivators were immediately stunned, along with the dozen something people in front and even the cultivators on the battleships beside Su Ming. All of them had strange expressions.

Xu Hui sighed and shook her head, but did not speak. Su Ming frowned, but when he saw the bald crane's excitement, he did not take any action to put a stop to its excitement.

The entire galaxy fell silent at that moment. Only the bald crane's voice continued echoing. Several breaths later, the old man in Solar Kalpa Realm lifted his right hand and struck his storage bag with a strange expression. He then brought out an emerald green bag and pushed it towards the bald crane.

"There are one million crystals in here. Please accept it, Great Sect Member."

The bald crane's eyes went wide. It seized the bag and quickly opened it. With a solemn expression, it scrutinized its contents several times before it beamed and swiftly returned to Su Ming's side. It hugged the bag, and powerful light shone in its eyes.

'I'm rich! I'm rich! Darn it all, if we continue like this, I'll definitely be rich!'

With the respect from the tens of thousands of cultivators whose hearts were filled with a strange feeling, Su Ming and the group gradually left into the distance. The area around them was silent. No one spoke, but there would be someone who would occasionally sneak a glance at Flame Fiends' Progenitor.

The old man had originally stood beside the bald crane. But by then, he had taken a few steps backwards while sighing with great emotion in his heart. If it was him, he would have definitely asked for eight hundred million or one billion. The bald crane had shouted for half a day, but only asked for one hundred thousand, and the other party had even given it a lot more than what it initially asked. This was so embarrassing...

Su Ming decided to close his eyes. Once he sat down cross-legged, he acted as if he did not hear the bald crane counting crystals behind him. After several days, the it let out a shrill scream. That scream instantly attracted the attention of the cultivators around them. When they turned their heads towards it, they saw the bald crane shuddering and screaming with gritted teeth.

"Damn it, damn it! He lied to me! This isn't one million crystals. Three crystals are lacking. I still need three more before I reach one million. I'm going to die, this Grandpa Crane is going to die! How could I have miscalculated? I'm still missing three, aarrgghhh... My crystals..." the bald crane screamed shrilly while its body shuddered as if it had lost the most important thing in its life.

"My cute crystals, my beautiful crystals, my crystals which are even more important than my life... Damn it, I'm going to die, I'm seriously going to die."

When the crowd heard those words, their hearts calmed down. There was no longer a strange expression in their gazes, but instead, it had turned into one of respect.

They respected... an existence that was so obsessed with crystals that it would replace everything about it.

That respect grew even more when the bald crane's pained screams and endless chatter lasted for ten days. It continued trying to persuade Su Ming to turn back and return to the planets to regain those three missing crystals. The drive powered by its obsession alarmed the cultivators, and they were ashamed that they could not match up to it.

There was also a new form of respect that took shape in their gazes when they looked towards Su Ming. If it were them, they would have been driven mad a long time ago by the bald crane, but he continued to sit with his expression unchanging. He would even occasionally respond...

In the end, even Flame Fiends' Progenitor could stand it no longer. He seized his bosom with his right hand and brought out three crystals to the bald crane.

"That's yours, not mine. Even if you give me three crystals, I'm still missing three!" The bald crane caught those crystals, but its piercing voice still echoed in space.

Su Ming was already used to it. It was not the first time the bald crane had showed its extreme obsession towards the crystals.

Time passed by slowly like that, and another month passed with the hundreds of battleships charging forward through the galaxy. They passed by various planets, and the bald crane would extort each one, which made it more and more excited. However, even so, it was still obsessed with the three crystals it had missed because it had miscalculated.

When they were only seven days away from Morning Dao Sect, Zhu You Cai, who had his eyes shut since the beginning while standing behind Su Ming, suddenly opened his eyes. A brilliant light shone in them.

Next was the bald crane. Its endless chatter fell silent abruptly. A glint appeared in the eyes of Flame Fiends' Progenitor. The nine old Frail Darknesses all opened their eyes a slit.

The battleships instantly shone with a powerful light. The expressions of the cultivators on them became grim.

All the people's gazes instantly landed on the planet before them.

More accurately speaking, it was not a planet, but a gigantic egg!

Its surface was filled was uneven. It was just like a gigantic stone, which was why it looked like a planet, but in truth, it was a huge egg.

The mighty pressure spreading out from it was so strong that even Zhu You Cai had opened his eyes, a telling sign of how strong was the life being nursed in it. There were dozens of cultivators flying around at that moment. One of them stood in space with his arms over his chest and was watching Su Ming approach the area with a cold sneer.

There was a half-naked young man sitting on the huge egg. In his hand he held a beast bone and was biting on it, making crunching noises. His hair spilled all over his shoulders, and a primitive, savage presence spread out from his body. His eyes were narrowed and starting the fleet of battleships before him.

"What a grand parade. So you are Dao Kong, one of the people who belong to those who can be considered my grandchildren, but one who still managed to become a Dynast and whom I have never met before?" The young man's eyes were as sharp as blades. They instantly swept past the people on the battleships to land on Su Ming.

As he spoke, he bit through the beast bone in his hand. Once he ate all of it, he picked up the Constellation Robe beside him and wiped his hands on it before wiping his mouth. With a glare, an awe-inspiring presence came from his body, and he held none of it back.

"I've seen plenty of your ancestors. How dare you not pay your respects to me? When your father was still a nobody, he did not have the courage to not kneel before me. Go back and ask that damn mother of yours whether she still remembers Dao Fei Feng, having seen me in the rain one thousand years ago! Who even are you? Get over here!"

"Dao Fei Feng, he is..." Xu Hui's pupils shrank. She was about to introduce him, but Su Ming was faster.

"Take his head and hang it on the bow of my ship. We'll bring it back to Morning Dao Sect."